To Winter

List of Plates

Each image appears in either the black-and-white plate section (BW) or the colour plate section (C).

1 *The Spirit of Samuel Appearing to Saul at the House of the Witch of Endor* (1668) by Salvator Rosa (1615–73). Louvre, Paris / Peter Willi / Bridgeman Images (PWI91401). BW

2 *Figure of Charon*, detail from fresco by Luca Giordano (1634–1705). De Agostini Picture Library / G. Nimatallah / Bridgeman Images (DGA514524). BW

3 Ms Fr. 143 f.136v: Hades and Persephone seated in the underworld on a throne in the form of an eagle's head with Cerebus before them. French School (fifteenth century). Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris / Bridgeman Images (XTD69820). C

4 *The Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus* by Frans Francken the Younger (1581–1642). Musée Municipal, Cambrai / Bridgeman Images (XIR238797). BW

5 *Garden of Paradise* (*c.*1415) by Master of Oberrheinischer (fifteenth century). Städelsches Kunstinstitut, Frankfurt am Main / Bridgeman Images (GR12994). C

6 Ms Fr 18 Fol.3v: The City of God, from a translation of the works of St Augustine by Raoul de Presles (*c.*1469–73) (vellum). French School (fifteenth century). Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris / Archives Charmet / Bridgeman Images (CHT174623). C

7 *St Thomas Aquinas* by Sandro Botticelli (1444/5–1510). Abegg Collection, Riggisberg / Bridgeman Images (PHD29144). BW

8 *The Divine Comedy*. Dante and Virgil in Purgatory. Folio 177 r. 1480–2. By Guglielmo Giraldi (*fl.* 1445–90). Biblioteca Apostolica Vaticana / Photo © Tarker / Bridgeman Images (TRK1031080). BW

9 *Purgatory*, detail from *Coronation of the Virgin* altarpiece by Enguerrand Quarton (*c.*1410–66). De Agostini Picture Library / G. Dagli Orti / Bridgeman Images (DGA504556). C

10 Ms 65/1284 f.113v: *Purgatory*, by Jean Colombe (*c.*1430–*c.*1493), from the fifteenth-century illuminated manuscript *Très riches heures du Duc de Berry*. Musée Condé, Chantilly / Bridgeman Images (CND173158). C

11 *Dante and His Poem the 'Divine Comedy'* (1465) by Domenico di Michelino (1417–91). Duomo, Florence / Bridgeman Images (BEN42355). C

12 *The Last Judgement, the Children's Limbo* (fifteenth–sixteenth century), detail from the *Biblia pauperum*, fresco attributed to Cagnola or Cagnoli Workshop, Church of the Most Holy Trinity, Momo, Piedmont, Italy. De Agostini Picture Library / G. Dagli Orti / Bridgeman Images (DGA925195). BW

13 *Descent of Christ into Limbo* (*c.*1482). French School (fifteenth century). Musée des Beaux-Arts de Chambéry, Savoie, Rhône-Alpes / Bridgeman Images (XIR275455). C

14 Ms 1130: Soul leaving the body accompanied by an angel, miniature from *Le livre des propriétés des choses* by Bartholomeus Anglicus (d.1272). French School (fourteenth century). Bibliothèque Sainte-Geneviève / Archives Charmet / Bridgeman Images (CHT211481). BW

15 *Saint Michael Weighing the Souls at the Last Judgement* (*c.*1500), attributed to Hans Leu the Elder (*c.*1460–1507). Kunsthaus, Zurich / Bridgeman Images (XIR269523). C

16 *Noli me tangere*, altarpiece of the Dominicans by Martin Schongauer (*c.*1440–91). Musée d'Unterlinden, Colmar / Bridgeman Images (XIR62384). C

17 *The Resurrection of the Flesh*, from *Last Judgement* fresco cycle (1499–1504) by Luca Signorelli (*c.*1445–1523), San Brizio chapel, right transept of Orvieto Cathedral, Umbria, Italy. De Agostini Picture Library / S. Vannini / Bridgeman Images (DGA911913). BW

18 *The Last Judgement* by Jan Provost (1465–1529). Detroit Institute of Arts / Gift of James E. Scripps / Bridgeman Images (DTR396599). C

19 *The Landauer Altarpiece, All Saints Day* (1511) by Albrecht Dürer (1471–1528). Kunsthistorisches Museum, Vienna / Bridgeman Images (XAM68677). BW

20 *The End of the World and the Last Judgement* by Cristoforo de Predis (1440–86), from the Codex of Predis (1476). Photo © Tarker / Bridgeman Images (TRK558925). C

21 Protestant Reformation. Germany. Satire against the sale of indulgences (sixteenth century). Private Collection / Photo © Tarker / Bridgeman Images (TRK1149945). C

22 Martin Luther writing on the church door at Wittenberg in 1517. German School (sixteenth century). Private Collection / Bridgeman Images (XJF131289). BW

23 *The Wagon of Elijah*, miniature from Latin Bible from St Amand's Abbey, Latin manuscript folio 200, France sixteenth century. De Agostini Picture Library / G. Dagli Orti / Bridgeman Images (DGA580218). BW

24 *Hell*, Portuguese School (sixteenth century). Museu Nacional de Arte Antiga, Lisbon / Bridgeman Images (XIR173185). C

25 The good being led to heaven, detail from *The Last Judgement* (*c.*1451) by Rogier van der Weyden (1399–1464). Hôtel-Dieu, Beaune / Bridgeman Images (XIR170077). C

26 *The Virgin in Glory with the Apostles*, central panel of a triptych, late fifteenth century, by Master of the Lyversberg Passion (*c.*1470–99). Musée des Beaux-Arts, Lille / Bridgeman Images (XIL175005). C

27 *The Doubt: Can These Dry Bones Live?* by Henry Bowler (1824–1903). By permission of the Tate Gallery. C

28 Emanuel Swedenborg (1688–1772). German School (nineteenth century). Private Collection / © Purix Verlag Volker Christen / Bridgeman Images (PRX1002227). BW

29 *The Meeting of a Family in Heaven*, pl 4 (1808), illustration by William Blake (1757–1827), engraved by Luigi Schiavonetti (1765–1810), from *The Grave, A Poem* by Robert Blair (1699–1746). Yale Center for British Art, Paul Mellon Collection / Bridgeman Images (XYC290774). BW

30 A table levitating during a seance with Eusapia Palladino (1854–1918), 12 November 1898. Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris / Archives Charmet / Bridgeman Images (CHT217819). BW

31 Portrait of Thomas Henry Huxley (1825–95). Universal History Archive / UIG / Bridgeman Images (UIG673197). BW

32 *The Blessed Damozel* (1875–8) by Dante Gabriel Rossetti (1828–82). Fogg Art Museum, Harvard Art Museums / Bequest of Grenville L. Winthrop / Bridgeman Images (FOG15166). C

33 Elsie with a winged gnome (1917). The second of the five Cottingley fairy photographs. Public domain. BW

34 The sceptical Charles Castle (Toby Stephens). From *Photographing Fairies* (1997), directed by Nick Willing. Arts Council / BBC / The Kobal Collection (PHO007AB). BW

Acknowledgements

This book was written in the Centre for the History of European Discourses, now part of the Institute for Advanced Studies in the Humanities at the University of Queensland in Australia. I have been privileged to have been a member of this centre for the past ten years. It has continued to provide a congenial, stimulating and, more often than one might hope to expect, exciting context in which to work. For this I am indebted in particular to my friends and colleagues Professor Peter Harrison, the director of the institute, Professor Fred D'Agostino and Emeritus Professor Peter Cryle. I am grateful also to the many postdoctoral fellows of the institute, especially Dr Leigh Penman, all of whose dedication to their work has provided so much encouragement to my own.

A wide-ranging book such as this is inevitably indebted to those scholars who have previously laboured in this intellectual domain. Without their often groundbreaking work, this book would not have been possible. In particular, I want to acknowledge the works of Alan Bernstein, Caroline Walker Bynum, Jacques Le Goff, D. P. Walker, Geoffrey Rowell, Colleen McDannell and Bernhard Lang, Michael Wheeler and John Casey. I take the opportunity once again to thank Alex Wright, my editor at I.B.Tauris, for his support and encouragement of this work. It is a matter of surprise to me that we have worked together on various book projects for over 20 years. I am grateful for it. I am grateful too to my partner Patricia Lee. Again, she has listened day by day to the text as it progressed, and has offered much helpful advice.

This book is dedicated to my fourth granddaughter, Winter Linde.

The present life of man upon earth, O king, seems to me, in comparison with that time which is unknown to us, like to the swift flight of a sparrow through the house wherein you sit at supper in winter, with your ealdormen and thegns, while the fire blazes in the midst, and the hall is warmed, but the wintry storms of rain or snow are raging abroad. The sparrow, flying in at one door and immediately out at another, whilst he is within, is safe from the wintry tempest; but after a short space of fair weather, he immediately vanishes out of your sight, passing from winter into winter again. So this life of man appears for a little while, but of what is to follow or what went before we know nothing at all.

Bede, *The Ecclesiastical History of England*

Death is not an event in life: we do not live to experience death. If we take eternity to mean not infinite temporal duration but timelessness, then eternal life belongs to those who live in the present. Our life has no end in just the way in which our visual field has no limits.

Ludwig Wittgenstein, *Tractatus Logico-philosophicus*

Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, and saying, 'The time is fulfilled, and the Kingdom of God is at hand; repent ye, and believe the gospel.'

Mark 1.14–15

Prologue

> When he awoke, he looked about with surprise. He couldn't believe what he saw. A startling change had come to his old body […] The warmth of the sun soon dried the moisture from his new body […] He had become a dragonfly! Swooping and dipping in great curves, he flew through the air. He felt exhilarated in the new atmosphere.
>
> Doris Stickney, *Waterbugs and Dragonflies: Explaining Death to Young Children* (2009)

The British television comedy series *Rev*. tells the story of an Anglican priest, Adam Smallbone, who has moved from a rural parish to St Saviour in the Marshes, a run-down parish in Hackney in the East End of London. There he has responsibility for the local parish primary school. When one of the school's favourite teachers is killed in an accident, Adam has the task of talking to the children about his death. He does so by telling the fable of the waterbugs and the dragonfly. He tells the children of a little colony of waterbugs at the bottom of a river. Every now and then, one of the bugs would crawl up a plant through the water into the light and never be seen again. One day, one special little waterbug decided that he too wanted to crawl up a plant. So he crawled up the plant, through the surface of the water and into the air. And he turned into a beautiful dragonfly. He flew around in the air and was as happy as he had ever been. But when he tried to go back down into the water to tell his bug friends how wonderful it was, he couldn't, because he wasn't a bug any more. He was a dragonfly. This upset him, until he remembered that all his friends would one day crawl up the plant too and join him in the sun.

Adam Smallbone's answer to the question of what happens to us when we die is, as we will see, a very modern one. But the questions with which he grapples are perennial. Do we survive death? Will we recognise ourselves? Will we be reunited with those we have left behind or those who have gone before? Will our actions in this life be punished or rewarded? Will we have an opportunity after death to make amends or change our ways? Will our

lives continue immediately after death or do we have to wait for a final end to history? What kind of body might we have? For most of us, the thought of our ceasing to be is unbearable. On the other hand, the thought that we shall live forever is almost unthinkable.

This is a book about what follows death and what happens after life. More particularly, it is a history of the destiny of the dead, of what we might then be like and of what might happen to us after we die. It is also a history of the places that we might inhabit – heaven, hell and Purgatory, limbo and Abraham's Bosom, Hades and Sheol, Paradise, Tartarus and the Isles of the Blessed – and of the complicated history of the connections between them all.

We do not know what follows our deaths, any more than we know what preceded our lives. Hence, this book is about our imaginings of the afterlife from the ancient Greeks and Hebrews to the present. For all we know, one, some or none of these imaginings may be true. But whatever the case, the history of the afterlife is the history of our hopes that there will be something after death and of our fears that there will be nothing. And, granted that there is something rather than nothing, it speaks to our dreams of eternal happiness, to our nightmares of eternal punishment, and to the myriad ways in which these have been inflected over the centuries.

Weaving in and out of these imaginings are the two foundational narratives within Western thought about the afterlife. On the one hand, there is a narrative built around the anticipation that our lives will continue *immediately* after the death of each of us. At the point of death, the soul will be weighed in the balance, judged according to its vice or virtue and sent to the bliss of heaven or cast into the pit of hell. On the other hand, there is another narrative, one that is driven by the expectation that our eternal destinies will be finally determined not at the time of death, but at that time when history ends, when this world will be no more and when Christ returns to judge both the living and the dead. Then there will only be two possible destinations for our souls reunited with our bodies. For Christ will bid the blessed to enter an eternity of bliss or throw the damned into the everlasting fire.

With these narratives in place within the first few centuries of the Christian era, the history of the afterlife in the West became the history of a constantly fluid series of negotiations, contestations and compromises between two versions of our futures after death. The majority determinedly held to the necessity of both in an intellectual compromise that, as is often

the way with such accommodations, was always on the verge of collapsing. This particular compromise disintegrated by, on the one hand, denying the ongoing conscious life of the individual immediately after death and passionately asserting the general judgement on the Last Day, often in the context of the expectation of the imminent return of Christ, while on the other asserting just as passionately the full delights of heaven for the righteous and the full horrors of hell for the damned immediately after death, generally in the expectation of a long continuation for the Church on earth together with a disregard for any immediate end to history.

Modern histories of the afterlife in the West have focused on one or other of these narratives. This book, by contrast, is shaped by the interplay, tensions and conflicts between them within a history that tells the story of each of them.

If the history of the afterlife in the West is one of a complicated and often messy tension between the destiny of the dead immediately after death and their destiny after the end of history, it is also the story of the conflict about the nature of the individual and what it is in the present that survives into the future. From the beginning of the third century, Christianity adopted the Greek tradition that individuals are composed of a mortal body and an immortal soul. This anthropology enabled sense to be made of the tension between the fate of the individual after death and after the Last Judgement. It was the soul that survived between death and the Last Day, and it was the body that was resurrected on the Last Day and reunited with the soul. Thus, the history of the afterlife is also the history of the conflict between the body and the soul as the essence of what it is to be human, sometimes the assertion of the necessity of both body and soul, occasionally the acknowledgement of the one to the exclusion of the other.

This opposition between body and soul was intellectually difficult to sustain. Thus, this book also traces the history of how the distinction between body and soul was sufficiently fragile for the one to be likely to collapse into the other and the difference between the two made effectually redundant. The soul was 'corporealised' and the body 'spiritualised'. On the one hand, it became necessary to accord to the soul the sort of quasi-corporeality that allowed it a geographical location after death either above or below the earth. As a result, it took on physical aspects – the soul was gendered, and had rank and status. On the other hand, it was crucial to 'spiritualise' the body – to resurrect it not as it was at the point of death but in an 'ideal' form most suited to its enjoyment of the delights of heaven

or to its suffering of the pains of hell. This ambivalence around the natures of the body and the soul was also increased by tensions between different views of the purpose of the afterlife – between the passive contemplation of God on the one hand and the active life of community with one's heavenly companions, the saints, the angels and the martyrs, on the other; between progress towards happiness and perfection and the immediate attainment of these at death. Different heavenly needs meant different heavenly bodies.

And heavenly needs also changed. Thus, the history of the afterlife in the West is also that of a tension between an eternal life centred on the love and worship of God more or less to the exclusion of human relationships, one centred on human relationships as the exemplar of divine love, and one focused on human relationships to the virtual exclusion of God. The last two millennia have seen a transition through these three ideas, from a God-centred heaven to an array of secular heavens, both this-worldly and other-worldly.

At the same time, this book also gives a history of the human demand for justice. It tells of the belief that, on earth, the evil seem to prosper and the good to languish. It reflects on the recognition that, since virtue is not obviously its own reward, the best solution to the injustices on this side of the grave is to even them up on the other. Thus, it speaks of the creation of places after death where the righteous would receive their just recompense and the wicked their just deserts, and of punishments and rewards proportionate to vices and virtues.

The history of the human demand for justice in the afterlife is also a history of certain key attributes of God as he has been understood within the West during the past 2–2,500 years. It was God who would reward the good and punish the wicked, who would weigh up souls at the moment of their death and who would determine their eternal destiny. He did so, in different ways at different times in the history of the afterlife, according to various measures of his goodness, his justice and his righteous anger. More particularly, the issue around the nature of God went to the question of whether his goodness necessitated the ultimate salvation of all in spite of his justice and wrath, or whether his justice and wrath entailed the eternal punishment of the wicked, or at least their eventual annihilation, in spite of his will that all should be saved.

Be that as it may, and regardless of which divine attribute most determined the divine nature, it was accepted for the most part that God would save or damn in accordance with the virtues or vices of the dead. But it was

sometimes also argued that he apportioned eternal happiness or everlasting torments merely as the arbitrary act of his own sovereign will, regardless of any person's virtues or vices. In short, God could do whatever he liked and, it was argued, he did just that. This was a view not conducive to encouraging the pursuit of virtue in this life in the hope of reward in the next.

Finally, amid all these tensions and complexities across the centuries, this book tells the story of what ultimately motivated all the variations in the two grand narratives of the afterlife in Western thought and what ultimately unifies them. Thus, this history of life after death speaks of our determination to find meaning and purpose in history from the perspective of that which ends history. It resonates with the conviction that the meaning and purpose of individual lives can be found from the perspective of the eternity that, it was believed and generally still is, follows death – that moment between time and timelessness, this life and the afterlife that threatens to render all of it just so much 'vanity and a chasing after wind' (Eccles. 2.11).

Chapter One

The Destiny of the Dead

> No one shall be found among you [...] who consults ghosts or spirits, or who seeks oracles from the dead. For whoever does these things is abhorrent to the Lord; it is because of such abhorrent practices that the Lord your God is driving them out before you.
>
> Deuteronomy 18.10–12

The spirits of the dead

According to the book of Deuteronomy (*c.*650 BCE) in the Hebrew Scriptures (the Old Testament), when the Israelites first entered the Promised Land, they encountered necromantic cults in which wisdom was sought from the dead. At least some of them adopted such practices for, as the above text makes clear, it became necessary to forbid them from doing so.

The biblical story of the Witch of Endor shows that such practices were not so easily extinguished. According to this, after the death of the prophet Samuel, King Saul had expelled all the mediums and wizards from the land. Terrified at the advance of the Philistines against him, and no longer able to seek advice from Samuel, Saul asked God what to do. However, neither from dreams, nor from divination, nor from other prophets did he receive an answer. So Saul broke his own ban on consulting with the dead by going in disguise to a woman of Endor who was a medium. He asked her to call up Samuel for him. When Saul asked her what she saw, she replied, 'I see a divine being coming up out of the ground.' Upon Saul asking her to describe him, she replied, 'An old man is coming up; he is wrapped in a robe.' Then Saul knew that it was Samuel, and he bowed with his face to the ground (see Plate 1 [BW]). The spirit told Saul of his disobedience to God and that God had therefore turned against him. The spirit could also see the future, and told Saul that God would give Israel into the hands of the Philistines. Saul and his sons would die: 'tomorrow you and your sons

shall be with me' (1 Sam. 28.3–19). Samuel had been brought up from the world of the dead, and Saul and his sons would join him there.

It is clear from this story that, in ancient Judaism, the dead, whether good or evil, were to be gathered in one place. It is also clear that Samuel, capable still of appearing among the living, has retained some form of existence there. This place of the spirits of the dead was called 'Sheol'. And it was located below the earth. The first reference to Sheol occurs in the first book of the Bible, Genesis, when Jacob believed that his son Joseph, sold into slavery in Egypt by his brothers, was dead. When his sons and daughters tried to comfort him, he refused and said, 'No, I shall go down to Sheol to my son, mourning' (Gen. 37.35). For Jacob, Joseph is still someone who is somewhere and with whom he will be reunited after his death. But it is not a place of joy and, inevitable as it is, not a place of desire. Rather, it is a place of darkness, a shadowy place, a land of forgetfulness and, metaphorically at least, of destruction, beneath the earth or even in the lower parts of the earth. The dead have only a sort of 'half-life'. They become the *rephaim*, 'the shades': 'The dead [*methim*] do not live,' declared Isaiah, 'shades [*rephaim*] do not rise – because you have punished and destroyed them, and wiped out all memory of them' (Isa. 26.14).

It was not only a place to which all would inevitably go, but also one to which God sent his enemies *as* punishment if not *for* punishment and, if they crossed him, sooner rather than later. Thus, for example, during the many years that the Israelites wandered in the wilderness, Moses declared that only the descendants of Aaron would be priests. When this was opposed by Korah, Dathan and Abiram, Moses asked them to stand in front of their tents with their wives and families, and asked all the others to move away. Moses then demonstrated his authority:

> the ground under them was split apart. The earth swallowed them up, along with their households – everyone who belonged to Korah and all their goods. So they with all that belonged to them went down alive into Sheol; the earth closed over them, and they perished from the midst of the assembly. (Num. 16.31–3)

Two hundred and fifty of their supporters were also burnt alive by a fire sent from God, so that 'no outsider who is not of the descendants of Aaron shall approach to offer incense before the Lord, so as not to become like Korah and his company' (Num. 16.40). Moreover, God had power over

those in Sheol. For as he could send people into Sheol, so also he could bring them back: 'The Lord kills and brings to life; he brings down to Sheol and raises up' (1 Sam. 2.6).

Sheol, however, was more than just a geographical location. The Old Testament's references to 'Sheol' also suggest a netherworld being, one who stands naked before God and has hands, womb, throat and a mouth to swallow the dead – 'an insatiate deity residing underneath, craving for human life but at the same time prone to negotiations and eager to receive ransom for the dead'.[1] Thus 'Sheol' refers to both a place and person.

We find the same ambiguity in the term 'Hades' in the underworld geography of classical Greece. There Hades (Haides, Aides, Aidoneus, Pluton) was king of the underworld and god of death and the dead. He was the son of Kronos and Rhea, and brother to Zeus and Poseidon. After the three brothers had vanquished the Titans and imprisoned them in Tartarus, they drew lots for the division of the cosmos. As Homer's *Iliad* (*c.* eighth century BCE) told it:

> For three brethren are we, begotten of Cronos, and born of Rhea, – Zeus, and myself, and the third is Hades, that is lord of the dead below. And in three-fold wise are all things divided, and unto each hath been apportioned his own domain. I [Poseidon] verily, when the lots were shaken, won for my portion the grey sea to be my habitation for ever, and Hades won the murky darkness, while Zeus won the broad heaven amid the air and the clouds; but the earth and high Olympus remain yet common to us all.[2]

Hades was married to Persephone, the daughter of Demeter (see Plate 3 [C]). They both reigned in a subterranean palace through the entrance to which – the gate of Hades – all had to pass, never to return.

As in the case of 'Sheol' in the Hebrew Bible, Hades was also the name of the place in which the god Hades ruled. And like Sheol, it was a dark and loathsome place to which all of us, with a few heroic exceptions, must go. As Walter Burkert eloquently put it:

> When the earth shakes during the battle of the gods, Hades leaps from his throne and roars in terror lest the earth break open and his realm be exposed to the light, ghastly, mouldering, and an abomination to the gods – as when a stone is overturned revealing putrefaction and teeming larvae.[3]

In the *Iliad*, the Trojan hero Hector had slain Patroclus, the much-loved friend of Achilles. Unable to give up the corpse of Patroclus, Achilles in his grief delayed his cremation. When sleep seized Achilles, the spirit or *psyche* (ψῡχή) of Patroclus, the ghostly image of Patroclus that survived his death, came to him in a dream:

> Thou sleepest, and hast forgotten me, Achilles. Not in my life wast thou unmindful of me, but now in my death! Bury me with all speed, that I pass within the gates of Hades. Afar do the spirits keep me aloof, the phantoms of men that have done with toils, neither suffer they me to join myself to them beyond the River, but vainly I wander through the wide-gated house of Hades. And give me thy hand, I pitifully entreat thee, for never more again shall I come back from out of Hades, when once ye have given me my due of fire. Never more in life shall we sit apart from our dear comrades and take counsel together, but for me hath loathly fate opened its maw, the fate that was appointed me even from my birth. Aye, and thou thyself also, Achilles like to the gods, art doomed to be brought low […] Lay not my bones apart from thine, Achilles, but let them lie together.[4]

Achilles asked Patroclus to come closer so that they might embrace each other for a last time. So saying, 'he reached forth with his hands, yet clasped him not; but the spirit like a vapour was gone beneath the earth, gibbering faintly.' Thus were mighty warriors reduced to elusive shades in the murky darkness of Hades, like bats that flit about gibbering 'when one has fallen from off the rock from the chain in which they cling to one another'.[5]

This was the darkness that Odysseus also met when he journeyed to the underworld in the *Odyssey*, to the place where the four rivers of the underworld – the Styx, Cocytus, Pyriphlegethon and Acheron – met. In this case, it was a far-distant place to the west where 'baneful night is spread over wretched mortals'.[6] But it was also vertically 'beneath the depths of the earth',[7] and the dead seemed to come up from below:

> Then there gathered from out of Erebus the spirits of those that are dead, brides, and unwedded youths, and toil-worn old men, and tender maidens with hearts yet new to sorrow, and many, too, that had been wounded with bronze-tipped spears, men slain in fight, wearing their blood-stained

> armour. These came thronging in crowds about the pit from every side, with a wondrous cry; and pale fear seized me.[8]

There Odysseus encountered his mother, Anticleia, who had died in his absence. When Odysseus tried to embrace her, she escaped from his arms like a shadow or a dream. 'This is the appointed way with mortals when one dies,' his mother told him, for 'the sinews no longer hold the flesh and bones together […] and the spirit, like a dream, flits away, and hovers to and fro.'[9] Rather like the fate of Dante's virtuous pagans, it was a life after death as much pointless as punitive. So when Odysseus tried to console Achilles by suggesting that at least he ruled over the dead, Achilles replied:

> Nay, seek not to speak soothingly to me of death, glorious Odysseus. I should choose, so I might live on earth, to serve as the hireling of another, of some portionless man whose livelihood was but small, rather than to be lord over all the dead that have perished.[10]

Still, in the afterlife of Homer, while a shadowy half-life was the fate of most, there were hints of punishments for those who stood out from the common dead. These were most likely in murky Tartarus, the place of the Titans, 'where is the deepest gulf beneath the earth, the gates whereof are of iron and the threshold of bronze, as far beneath Hades as heaven is above earth.'[11] Odysseus saw Tityos, the attempted rapist of Leto, lying on the ground with two vultures upon him, tearing out his liver and plunging their beaks into his bowels. There too he saw Tantalus, standing in a pool with water up to his chin. As he reached down for the water, it dried up. As often as he stretched towards the fruit above him, the wind would blow the branches out of his reach. And Sisyphus too, Odysseus saw in torment, punished by Zeus for his hubris, forever condemned to push a boulder uphill until,

> as often as he was about to heave it over the top, the weight would turn it back, and then down again to the plain would come rolling the ruthless stone. But he would strain again and thrust it back, and the sweat flowed down from his limbs, and dust rose up from his head.[12]

Thus, for most, there was the shadowy half-life of Hades. For the greatest of the enemies of the gods, there were the torments of Tartarus. For a

select few, however, there was no death. Rather, there was a transportation to the Elysian Fields, where life was 'easiest for men': 'No snow is there, nor heavy storm, nor ever rain, but ever does Ocean send up blasts of the shrill-blowing West Wind that they may give cooling to men.'[13] According to Hesiod, a contemporary of Homer, the destiny of the few was the Isles of the Blessed, 'along the shore of deep swirling Ocean' at the end of the earth. It was populated by the heroes who fell at Troy or Thebes. Untouched by sorrow, they lived there as 'happy heroes for whom the grain-giving earth bears honey-sweet fruit flourishing thrice a year'.[14]

In the third century BCE, the Hebrew Bible (the Old Testament) was translated into Greek for the Greek-speaking Jews of Egypt. Known as the Septuagint, this was the version of the text that the Greek-speaking composers of the New Testament made use of. Thus, granting the above analogies between the Greek Hades and the Hebrew Sheol, it is a matter of little surprise that the word 'Hades' (ἅδης) was used in the Septuagint for 'Sheol', and thence migrated into the Greek New Testament.

Rewards and punishments

Thus, with few exceptions, whether in Greece of the seventh century BCE or in the ancient Israel of the same period, the fate of the dead was the same – a half-life in the realm of the shades. As the same destiny for all, regardless of their behaviour, it provided no incentive for behaviour, good or evil, on this side of the grave. Later Old Testament texts began to note that, on this side of death also, there seemed to be little to be gained from a life of service and obedience to God. To put it simply, bad things happened to good people and vice versa. Thus, for example, the book of Malachi (mid-fifth century BCE), the final book of the Old Testament, reflected dissatisfaction with the outcomes of commitment to God:

> It is vain to serve God. What do we profit by keeping his command or by going about as mourners before the Lord of Hosts? Now we count the arrogant happy; evildoers not only prosper, but when they put God to the test they escape. (Mal. 3.14–15)

The writer of Ecclesiastes (third century BCE) believed that there was justice neither on this nor on the other side of death. 'There is a vanity that

takes place on earth,' he declared, 'that there are righteous people who are treated according to the conduct of the wicked, and there are wicked people who are treated according to the conduct of the righteous' (Eccles. 8.14). And yet, 'the same fate comes to all, to the righteous and the wicked, to the good and the evil [...] This is an evil in all that happens under the sun, that the same fate comes to everyone' (Eccles. 9.2–3). It was a sentiment echoed in the book of Job (perhaps sixth century BCE), a work that took as its central theme the unmerited suffering of the virtuous: 'One dies in full prosperity, being wholly at ease and secure [...] Another dies in bitterness of soul, never having tasted of Good. They lie alike in the dust, and the worms cover them' (Job 21.23–6).

The best solution for injustice on this side of the grave was to even it up on the other. The earliest example of this is in the description of Sheol in the First Book of Enoch, a Jewish religious work that is not part of the Hebrew Bible, in a section of the text that can be dated to the third century BCE. Here, for the first time, there was a distinction made between the fate of the righteous and that of the wicked. Hades had now become segregated into four hollow places in which four different classes of the dead were located until the Day of Judgement (of which more anon). These were not merely waiting rooms for rewards and punishments yet to come. These rewards and punishments had already begun.

According to the text, the angel Raphael showed Enoch a high mountain in the west in which there were four deep 'hollow places'. Three of them were dark, while one was light and with a fountain of water in the middle of it. Raphael told Enoch that these 'hollow places [are intended] that the spirits of the souls of the dead might be gathered into them'. The dead were separated according to their ethical quality, and rewarded or punished accordingly. The first of these spaces, a place of light and life, was intended for the righteous. In the second compartment dwelt sinners whose wickedness had gone unpunished in their lifetimes and who were now experiencing 'this great torment'. It is less clear who resided in the next place. They were certainly the victims of murder, although their residence in a place of darkness suggests that they were not necessarily merely innocent ones. In the fourth and final place were another group of sinners, who, unlike those in the second compartment, did not seem to be suffering torment either after death or after the final judgement, probably because they received punishment during their lifetimes.[15]

It was inevitable that such nuances in the underworld would be simplified into two locations – one for the righteous and one for the wicked. As we will see later, it was a simplification that much subsequent theorising about the afterlife would try to avoid. However that may be, by the time of another non-biblical Jewish text known as the Second Apocalypse of Baruch (*c.*110 CE), the four locations of the First Book of Enoch have become two. Unlike in the First Book of Enoch, however, this time the two places in Hades are not so much places of rewards or punishment as waiting rooms for what is to come after the end of the world:

> [I]t will happen at that time that those treasuries will be opened in which the number of the souls of the righteous were kept […] But the souls of the wicked will the more waste away when they shall see all these things. For they know that their torment has come and their perdition has arrived.[16]

The apocryphal Christian work the Fourth Book of Ezra (*c.*100 CE) has more historical importance because of its 'proofs' that the end of the world was at hand. Thus, when in 1726 a woman of Godalming in Surrey, Mary Toft, apparently gave birth to live rabbits, William Whiston (1667–1752), Isaac Newton's successor in the Lucasian Chair of Mathematics at the University of Cambridge, believed that she was the fulfilment of the prophecy in the Fourth Book of Ezra that 'menstruous women shall bring forth monsters'.[17] But this book also gave a long account of the fate of the dead immediately after death. In answer to Ezra's question whether the spirits of the dead would rest until the end of the world or whether there would be immediate torments, the angel told Ezra that the dead would have seven days of freedom during which the righteous would see the rewards awaiting them, and the wicked the torments yet to come. At the end of the seven days, the righteous anticipating with pleasure the joys yet to come would be gathered into chambers 'in profound quiet', guarded by angels. The wicked were doomed to continue wandering around 'ever grieving and sad' for what was to come.[18] After the final judgement, the wicked would go to the furnace of hell, the righteous to the Paradise of delight.[19] In an early version of what later came to be called 'the abominable fancy', the sufferings of the wicked would be increased by their knowing of the joys of the righteous – and the joys of the saved by their awareness of the wanderings of the ungodly and their ultimate punishments.

All of which brings us to Abraham's Bosom and the so-called *Josephus's Discourse to the Greeks Concerning Hades*. Traditionally ascribed to the Jewish historian Josephus (*c.*37–*c.*100 CE), this text is now thought to have been written by the Roman Christian Hippolytus (*c.*170–*c.*236 CE). According to Hippolytus, Hades was a place beneath the earth in which the sun did not shine and which was, as a result, completely in darkness. It was a guardhouse for souls, overseen by angels. Within Hades, there was also another place set apart, 'a lake of unquenchable fire', into which no one had as yet been thrown, although it was ready to receive the wicked on the Day of Judgement.[20] Both the righteous and the unrighteous were in Hades, although not in the same part of it.

At the time of death, all souls descended into Hades, at the entrance to which was a gate guarded by angels. Having passed through this gate, the dead were divided. The righteous were conducted in light to the right until they reached a place full of light, neither hot nor cold nor painful. There they enjoyed the contemplation of the blessings in their view, with expectations of the joys yet to come. There too, the righteous and the fathers were seen to be ever smiling 'as they wait for the rest and eternal revival in heaven which succeed this location'.[21] This place was known, we are told, 'by the name of *Abraham's bosom*'.[22]

The unrighteous, on the other hand, were dragged away unwillingly to the left as prisoners by angels who were ministers of punishment and forced down into the lower parts up to the edge of hell (γέεννα, Gehenna). There, 'they shudder in horror at the expectation of the future judgement, (as if they were) already feeling the power of their punishment'.[23] A deep and vast abyss lay between these two places in Hades, 'so that neither can any of the righteous in sympathy think to pass it, nor any of the unrighteous dare to cross it'.[24] There they all remained until the Day of Judgement. For Hippolytus, Hades remained the destination of *all* the dead, albeit divided into locations for the good and the wicked. It is clear too that Hippolytus made a further distinction within Hades, namely that it had within it a further and lower place, Gehenna, not yet populated but nevertheless the ultimate destination of the wicked after the final judgement.

Hippolytus may well have been influenced by his contemporary Tertullian (*c.*160–*c.*220 CE). Like Hippolytus, Tertullian also located all the dead (with the exception of the Christian martyrs), whether they lived before or after Christ, in Hades. There they remained until the Day of Judgement. Hades was 'a vast deep space in the interior of the earth, and

a concealed recess in its very bowels […] [on top of] the abysmal depths which lie still lower down'[25]. To those who complained of the unfairness in the good and the wicked going to the same place, Tertullian responded that both punishments and consolations were already experienced there, either in Abraham's Bosom or in the fire. The soul would be rewarded or punished immediately after death, 'without prejudice to the full process of the resurrection, when the recompense will be administered through the flesh besides'.[26] Still, even Tertullian was on occasion uncertain about the location of Abraham's Bosom within Hades. Nevertheless, he was driven to stress the great gulf between the two. Although he did not identify Abraham's Bosom with heaven or as part of heaven, he nevertheless wanted to designate it as higher than the underworld (*sublimiorem inferis*) and analogous to 'the Elysian Fields' (although presumably, unlike them, not located on the earth).[27]

This view that Hades was divided into two parts, in each of which the righteous and the unrighteous would receive anticipatory rewards or punishments was one that, as we will see in Chapter 2, St Augustine of Hippo (354–430 CE) finally came to. Augustine accepted the tradition that, between his death and resurrection, Christ had descended into Hades to preach to those who dwelt there. For Augustine, it was to the Bosom of Abraham that Christ descended in order to rescue the worthies who had preceded his coming. But unlike Tertullian and Hippolytus, Augustine believed that, on that day, Abraham's Bosom was emptied and that, from that point onwards, the righteous went into Paradise rather than Hades, a place opposed to it rather than part of it.

Go directly to Paradise

In their belief that, even after Christ, all, whether righteous or unrighteous, went to Hades immediately after death, Hippolytus and Tertullian were following the mainstream Jewish tradition. But among early Christian authors, they were in the minority. Generally, if it was believed that, as a result of Christ's preaching to the dead in Hades, those found worthy were translated elsewhere to a higher state, it was also presumed that the righteous who had died since Christ had risen from the dead had joined those worthies who had preceded them there. Again, generally, the most common view was that those who died in Christ went directly to Paradise.

The expectation that the righteous would go immediately to Paradise (or a Bosom of Abraham that was outside of Hades) was not only an apparent outcome of the emptying of Hades, but also a consequence of the words of Christ to the repentant thief: 'Truly I tell you, today you will be with me in Paradise [ἐν τῷ παραδείσῳ]' (Luke 23.43). However, granting the presence of Christ in Paradise on the day of his death, it was necessary to square this with the tradition of his descent into Hades on the same day. Clearly, even he was not able to be in two places at once.

Augustine, however, gave it his best shot to explain how Christ could be here, there and everywhere at the same time. If Christ was speaking as a man, declared Augustine, then since his soul went to the underworld, the repentant thief went with him there, and Paradise had to be conceived as part of Hades; if, however, he was speaking as God, then since God is everywhere, Christ was present with the blessed wherever they may be.[28] The Greek theologian Gregory of Nyssa (*c.*335–*c.*395 CE) had taken an alternative route by having Christ's body descend into Hades, while his soul escorted the thief to Paradise. The Alexandrian Neoplatonist theologian Origen (185–254 CE) had taken the simplest way by suggesting that, before he descended into Hades, Christ had dropped off the repentant thief in Paradise on his way.[29]

Paradise also bore an unclear connection to 'the third heaven'. In his Second Letter to the Corinthians, Paul had told his readers that he had been 'caught up' (or 'snatched away', ἁρπαγέντα) to 'the third heaven' (2 Cor. 12.2) and 'caught up into Paradise' (12.4), whether in body or not he was not sure. There he had heard things that were not to be told, 'that no mortal is permitted to repeat' (12.4). Paul was clearly referencing contemporary Jewish tradition that connected 'Paradise' and 'the third heaven' without necessarily equating them. Thus, for example, in the Second Book of Enoch, the product of a Jewish sect in the late first century CE, Enoch was taken up to the third heaven, whence he looked down upon Paradise, a place that was 'inconceivably pleasant' with trees in flower and ripe and pleasant-smelling fruits, in the middle of which was the tree of life, 'where the Lord takes a rest when he goes into Paradise'.[30] And within the Christian tradition, too, there remained uncertainty whether Paradise was to be equated with heaven as the final destination of the righteous or a penultimate destination.

If most were agreed that the righteous went to Paradise, where they were specifically located was a matter of much less certainty. This was, at least in part, because the relation of Paradise as a destination immediately

after death to one after the final Day of Judgement was opaque. It was also in part because the relation of Paradise to heaven, whether after death or after the Last Judgement, was unclear. Finally, in part again, just to muddy the waters further, it was because Paradise could be construed as a 'physical' or 'spiritual' location or both, simultaneously or sequentially.

Be that as it may, it was generally accepted among early Christian thinkers that Paradise was the destination immediately after death for the saved. And all agreed, not surprisingly, that it was essentially like a garden (see Plate 5 [c]). This was because the term *paradeisos* (παράδεισος) derived from Old Persian and designated a 'garden' or 'park'. It had been used by the Greek translators of the Old Testament to refer to the garden in which God placed Adam at the time of Creation (Gen. 2.15). The Paradise upon which Enoch looked down from the third heaven was (or perhaps replicated) that garden in Eden out of which Adam and Eve had been driven and to which the saved would return after death. Thus, the last book of the New Testament, Revelation (2.7), spoke of 'the tree of life in the paradise of God' from which the righteous would be permitted to eat. That the destination of the saved was an Edenic garden meant not only that the painful mortality that resulted from Eden was replaced with the happy immortality originally intended by God. It also signalled that this had been brought about by the life, death and resurrection of Christ, who, as the second Adam, had restored humanity to its condition before the Fall of Man.

The most vivid description of the new Paradise occurs in the Apocalypse of Paul (mid-third century CE). This text is an extensive elaboration of the story of Paul's being caught up into the third heaven in 2 Corinthians 12.2–4. It is of significance not least because of its influence on Islamic accounts of the Mi'rāj, Muhammad's ascent into heaven. But also, as a result of its translations into a large number of European languages, it is the origin of many popular ideas about the delights of heaven and the horrors of hell in Western Christianity, not least because of its influence on Dante's *Divine Comedy*. In the Apocalypse of Paul, the destinations of the dead, both the righteous and the unrighteous, before and after the Last Judgement, are woven into a complex and often confusing narrative that combines Jewish, Christian and classical themes.

Paul's journey began with an overview of the destiny of souls at the time of death. From his position in heaven, Paul looked down upon the earth. From there he saw a just man who was about to die. Around him, both good and evil angels gathered. The evil angels found no place in him

for them to inhabit. Thus, the holy angels took possession of his soul, guiding it until it departed his body. They told the soul to remember the body (*corpus*) that it was leaving, for it would return to that same body on the Day of Resurrection. The soul was then met by the guardian angel who had looked after it every day. The angel led the soul into the presence of God, who, knowing all that the man had done in his life, pronounced that his soul would be handed over to the angel Michael and led by him 'into the Paradise of joy, that it may become coheir with all the Saints.'[31]

Paul then saw the fate of an impious man. In his case, the good angels could find no place to inhabit. The evil angels took possession of his soul and drew it out of his body with the reminder: 'look upon your flesh [*caro*] from which you have come out; for it is necessary that you should return to your flesh in the day of resurrection.'[32] The impious soul was then led by its guardian angel to God, who, knowing of its misdeeds, pronounced his judgement:

> Let it therefore be handed over to the angel Tartaruchus [Tartarus], who is set over the punishments, and let him be cast into outer darkness, where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth, and let it be there till the great day of judgement.[33]

Although most souls were judged immediately, Paul saw one that had waited seven days to make an appeal, before his victims, who had been awaiting his arrival, also appeared before God to be judged. He too was eventually sent to Tartarus to be punished until the final Day of Judgement.

After Paul's vision of the divine court of justice, he was taken by his accompanying angel to the third heaven. There, at the entrance to the third heaven, he saw two golden pillars on which were written the names of the just even though they were still on earth. There he met Enoch and Elijah, the two Old Testament worthies who were believed never to have died but to have been translated straight to heaven (Gen. 5.24 and Heb. 11.5, 2 Kgs 2.11). The angel then led him over to the gates of heaven and showed him a land in which souls of the just dwelt for a short time after their death. This was a hidden Paradise on earth, Eden restored, where Christ would reign over the saints for a thousand years:

> And I looked around upon that land, and I saw a river flowing with milk and honey, and there were trees planted by the bank of that river, full

> of fruit; moreover, each single tree bore twelve fruits in the year, having various and diverse fruits; and I saw the created things which are in that place and all the work of God, and I saw there palms of twenty cubits, but others of ten cubits; and that land was seven times brighter than silver. And there were trees full of fruit from the roots to the highest branches, of ten thousand fruits of palms upon ten thousand fruits. The grape-vines had ten thousand plants.[34]

The angel then took him to a higher place in which the rewards of the just were seven times greater. They came to the Acherusian Lake, in which those who at death were repentant were baptised by the angel Michael prior to their entering the City of Christ.

Alongside the the garden, the city was perhaps the most common image of heaven. This was the result of the Old Testament imagining of a new Jerusalem that would be the capital of the final Messianic Kingdom (e.g. Ezek. 48.30–5), along with the book of Revelation's vision of a heavenly Jerusalem coming down from heaven to earth (Rev. 21–2). By the thirteenth century, the image of a heavenly city was beginning to overtake that of the heavenly garden, not least because of the dominance of Augustine's theology of the 'City of God' as opposed to the earthly city. It was an image that chimed with the developing dominance of urban life in the late medieval period (see Plate 6 [c]). The Apocalypse of Paul, however, like the book of Revelation, combined the imagery of the city with that of the Edenic garden. Thus, Paul's vision was that of a golden city surrounded by 12 walls and by the four rivers that formed from the one that flowed out of Eden. At the river of honey, Paul and his angelic guide met the Old Testament prophets; at the river of milk he saw all the infants that Herod slaughtered (among those who kept their chastity); at the river of wine he encountered the Old Testament patriarchs (among those who offered hospitality to strangers), while at the river of oil he saw all the faithful who had devoted themselves to God. He continued to the middle of the city, where he met those who, although unlettered, had goodness of heart and obeyed God. Having left the City of Christ, the angel took Paul westward across the ocean that encircled the earth, as in Homer, to the destination of the godless and sinful, a place of no light but of 'darkness and sorrow and sadness; and I sighed.'[35]

The punishments of the damned being far more interesting than the rewards of the righteous, then as now, here we find one of the earliest highly elaborated accounts of the multifarious suffering of the wicked allocated

according to their vices. Thus, Paul first saw a river boiling with fire in which men and women who in their lives were found neither among the just nor among the godless – the lukewarm churchgoers – were variously immersed. The depth to which the bodies sank measured the weight of their vices – those who engaged in idle disputes up to their knees (academics beware), those who continued to fornicate up to their navels, those who slandered each other up to their lips, and those who hypocritically plotted against their neighbours up to their eyebrows.

This was just the beginning. To the north, Paul saw a fiery river running down into deep pits, with people groaning and wailing and crying out for mercy. Paul, worried that the pits would soon fill up were 30 or 40 generations of sinners piled up, was reassured about the depth of the Abyss: 'The Abyss has no measure, for beneath it there stretches down below that which is below it […] For when the souls are thrown in there, they hardly reach the bottom in fifty years.'[36] The clergy especially were not exempt. By the fiery river, Paul saw a man being tortured by hell's angels, his bowels being pierced by an instrument with three hooks. He had been a hypocritical priest. Close by, there was a poorly performing bishop being stoned who failed to pity widows and orphans; and a fornicating deacon up to his knees in the fiery river, his bloodied hands outstretched, begging for mercy, with worms emerging from his mouth and nostrils.

Sins appear to be carefully matched to torments (although the modern reader is hard put to see how). Usurers were eaten by worms. Elsewhere, those who had disparaged the word of God were eating their own tongues. Magicians were immersed up to their lips in blood. Fornicators and adulterers paid their penalty in a pit of fire, while those who gave up their virginity before marriage, dressed in black, had burning chains placed on their necks by terrifying angels. Those who broke their fasts early were forever tempted (Tantalus-like) by fruit just out of reach. Users of prostitutes were hung by their hair and eyebrows; homosexuals, covered with dust, were to be found in a pit of tar and sulphur, running in a river of fire. Women who had had abortions, along with the fathers, were observed on a pillar of fire being torn to pieces by wild animals. And so on.

The angel then carried Paul to the north, where there was a well, guarded by an angel. At the request of Paul's angel, the well was opened so that Paul might see all the torments of the underworld. The angel of the well warned Paul to stand back, 'that you may be able to bear the stench of this place'.[37] The mouth of the well was so narrow it admitted only one person. Once

anyone entered, 'no remembrance of him shall ever be made in the sight of the Father and his Son and the holy angels'.[38] Paul saw fiery masses burning on all sides. These were those who denied the incarnation of Christ, the virgin birth, and the miracle of the Mass when bread and wine were turned into the body and blood of Christ. To the west were those who denied the resurrection of Christ and the final resurrection of all the dead. In that place, there was nothing but cold and snow.

Still, there was the occasional ray of light in this unremitting gloom. The aborted 'infants' were 'handed over to the angels of Tartarus who were set over the punishments, that they might lead them to a spacious place of mercy; but their fathers and mothers were tortured in a perpetual punishment.'[39] When the damned saw Christ descending from heaven, they cried out to him for mercy. For the sake of Michael the archangel and Paul, Christ granted the damned one respite from punishment on that day on which he rose from the dead. God's justice was after all tempered with some mercy, although not as a favour to the damned.

Paul's journey in the underworld ended when the angel took him back to the Paradise on earth in which Adam and Eve had sinned. There he saw the tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. While at the tree of life, he was visited by Mary the Mother of Christ, John the Baptist and his father, and the Old Testament worthies who wished to see him before he joined them permanently – Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, Joseph and his brothers, Moses, the prophets Isaiah, Jeremiah and Ezekiel, the righteous Lot from Sodom, Job, Noah, Elijah and Elisha, Enoch and Abel, and finally Adam, who declared, 'Take courage, Paul, beloved of God, you have brought a multitude to faith in God and to repentance. I myself have repented and received my praise from the compassionate and merciful one.'[40]

Paradise not quite regained yet

If it was generally accepted among early Christian thinkers that Paradise was the destination immediately after death for the saved, this was not the overarching view of the New Testament. On the contrary, in the New Testament, as in the Old, Hades was the destination of the dead. The Greek word for 'Hades' appears some ten times in the New Testament, twice each in the Gospels of Matthew and Luke, twice in the Acts of the Apostles, and four times in the book of Revelation.[41] In most of these cases,

the New Testament use followed that of the Old Testament in indicating a shadowy place of neither pain nor pleasure to which all descended immediately after death. But there are several exceptions to this. The first occurs in the story of the rich man and Lazarus (Luke 16.19–31), in which (as we will see further in Chapter 2) Hades is at least a place where the wicked are punished (and may also be a place where the good are rewarded). The second exception occurs in the Gospel of Matthew (11.23) and in a parallel passage in the Gospel of Luke (10.13). Here the context indicates that Hades is a place opposed to heaven (οὐρανος), to which the unrepentant people of Capernaum will go on the Day of Judgement. In a third case it means nothing more than death or the grave (1 Cor. 15.55).

That there is not a consistent account of Hades in the New Testament seldom worried early translators of the Greek New Testament. Most simply equated 'Hades' with 'hell', thus deeming it a place of punishment (which in the New Testament, with one exception, it isn't), and aligning the temporary place of all immediately after death with the eternal place of some after the Day of Judgement (which again in the New Testament it isn't). Thus, for example, Jerome's Latin translation of the Bible, the Vulgate (*c.*400 CE), used the Latin word for hell (*infernus* and variations) to translate Hades.[42] Martin Luther in his German New Testament (1522) generally used the German word for hell (*die Hölle*). The mid-sixteenth-century Protestant English Geneva Bible and the King James Bible of 1611 similarly opted for 'hell'. Luther also used the term *die Hölle* or a minor variant to translate the Greek word γέεννα (Gehenna). Similarly, the Geneva Bible and the King James Bible translated 'Gehenna' as 'hell' or 'hellfire'. In short, in these very important translations, no distinction was made between Hades and Gehenna. So it is little wonder that theorising about the afterlife using these translations could get messy. Moreover, to complicate matters further, Jerome's Vulgate retained the term 'Gehenna', thus maintaining a distinction between Gehenna and Hades. In so doing, Jerome was keeping the distinction that, as we will see further in the next chapter, Origen (*c.*185–*c.*254) had made. This was because Jerome accepted that Hades could contain the righteous and the wicked and thus was distinct from the place (Gehenna) that contained only the wicked.[43] Thus, both the rich man and Lazarus were in Hades. According to Origen, when Christ descended into Hades to preach to those dwelling there, those who were not converted descended further into Gehenna for punishment. For Origen, then, Hades and Gehenna were both places that existed and were populated on this

side of the final Day of Judgement. Although Origen was drawing upon a distinction between Hades and Gehenna that was present within the New Testament, there the distinction is generally drawn in a quite different way. There they were primarily distinguished as places to be populated on either side of the time of the final judgement.

The Greek word for 'Gehenna' (γέεννα) was originally the name of a valley outside Jerusalem, the valley of Hinnom (in Jesus's language, Aramaic, 'Gehanna', in Hebrew 'Ge Hinnom'). This valley had been a site of pagan ritual activity in which children had been sacrificed by fire to the Canaanite gods Molech and Baal. In later parts of the Old Testament, it became more generally a place where all the wicked were eventually to receive their punishment on the Day of Judgement (Jer. 7.32). Subsequently, it was freed from its association with a *particular* place and designated as that more general subterranean space in which the unrighteous would be placed. Thus the Fourth Book of Ezra (*c.*100 CE) tells us that, on the Day of Judgement, 'the furnace of [Gehenna] shall be disclosed and opposite the Paradise of delight'.[44]

It is this understanding of Gehenna – as a place of punishment after the final Day of Judgement – that dominates its use in the New Testament. There, the term occurs 12 times: seven times in the Gospel of Matthew, three times in the Gospel of Mark, and once each in the Gospel of Luke and the Letter of James.[45] With two exceptions in Luke and James, it refers to the destination of the damned after the final judgement. Thus, for example, Jesus declared, 'Do not fear those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; rather fear him who can destroy both the body and soul [ψυχήν] in hell [εν γεέννη]' (Matt. 10.28).

The important exception is Luke 12.4–5. The author of this Gospel rephrased Matthew 10.28 so that the saying of Jesus no longer referred to a final judgement of the body and the soul but to an immediate post-mortem judgement of the soul only: 'do not fear those who kill the body, and after that can do nothing more [...] Fear him who, after he has killed, has authority to cast into hell.' This is the first ever use of the term 'Gehenna' to refer to an immediate post-mortem destination of the dead. It is a usage that will also later occur in Rabbinic Judaism. This use of 'Gehenna' lines up with this same Gospel's story of the rich man and Lazarus, in which Hades is also the immediate destination of the dead. In short, in this Gospel, 'Hades' and 'Gehenna' do have the same meaning. This difference in understandings of 'Hades' and 'Gehenna' in the Gospels of Matthew and Luke also reflects the

different understandings that they have about the destination of the dead more generally. The Gospel of Matthew suggests that, in the intermediate state immediately after death, there is neither pleasure nor pain. Rather, the dead await the Day of Judgement, when both rewards and punishments will be distributed. The wicked will then receive their punishments in Gehenna. By contrast, the Gospel of Luke has immediate punishment for the wicked in Hades or Gehenna, immediate rewards for the righteous in Abraham's Bosom, with a final judgement only of the righteous and no final judgement of the wicked followed by their being cast into Gehenna.[46]

Only once in the New Testament does the classical 'Tartarus' receive a mention: 'For if God did not spare the angels when they sinned, but cast them down into hell [*tartarosas*, ταρταρώσας] and committed them to chains of deepest darkness to be kept until the judgment' (2 Pet. 2.4). Here, the use of 'Tartarus' to indicate a place of punishment immediately after death aligns with the classical Greek understanding of it. Jerome's Vulgate retained the term 'Tartarus'. But Luther along with the Geneva and King James versions used the term 'hell', yet again lining up a classical place of punishment *immediately after death* with that place in which the wicked would be located *after the final judgement*.

Sufficient has been said to indicate that the understanding of the destination of the dead in the New Testament is complex. I have tried to make as coherent as possible what is anything but. Crucially, as we have seen, this instability of the New Testament texts was reflected in the vernacular translations of it, translations which themselves often reflected the different theological positions that the translators brought to their task. What is clear from the above discussion, however, is that the lines between the destinations of the dead immediately after death and their destinies after the final judgement were not only blurred within the original New Testament texts, but made more opaque by the various translations of those texts. It also demonstrates the crucial issue of the complex relations that exist between the supposed destiny of the dead immediately after death and their destination at the end of history. These relations were, as we will see in Chapter 3, crucially dependent on understandings of the nature of the human individual, more specifically on the matter (so to say) of bodies and souls. Before examining the issue of the relation of bodies and souls, however, there is another set of complex issues around the destiny of the dead, or at least some of them, that relates to the geography of the underworld generally, and to the place of limbo in particular within it.

Chapter Two

The Geography of the Underworld

> There is a place down there not grim with pain
> but only with sad shades whose deep laments
> sound not as screams but melancholy sighs.
> I take my place with children – innocents
> in whom the bite of death set lethal teeth
> before they'd been made free of human sin.
>
> Dante, *Purgatorio*

Dante's limbo

In the early years of the fourteenth century, Dante Alighieri (1265–1321) was composing his *Divine Comedy* in three parts – the *Inferno*, the *Purgatorio* and the *Paradiso*. By that time, the fate of unbaptised infants had been determined within the Christian Church for the better part of the previous 900 years. At the time of their deaths, it was believed, they did not enter heaven. That they did not do so was because they died, as Dante put it, 'Before they'd been made free of human sin.'[1] Moreover, they never would go to paradise. Rather they would live forever on the edge of hell, 'suspended in that limbo.'[2]

Arguably, it was Dante's use of the term 'limbo' to refer to that place where dwelt the 'sad shades' of deceased children that popularised it in Western thought. He was not the first to use it, although it had only been coined shortly before his time. It was the Dominican monk Albert the Great (*c.*1200–80) who had first used the term *limbus* in the previous century to refer to a place in which at least some of the dead dwelt, and would do so eternally: 'Limbus signifies the hem of a garment,' he wrote, 'and can be applied to the place which is situated on the border of hell.'[3]

In Dante's architecture of the afterlife, there was a threefold vertical division between Paradise, Purgatory and, across the river called Acheron,

hell (see Plate 8 [BW]). It was in the third canto of the *Inferno* that Virgil led Dante to the gate of hell, upon which was written the words 'Abandon hope, all you who enter here'. Upon entering through the gate, Dante heard sobbing, moans and plaintive crying in the darkness:

> Discordant tongues, harsh accents of horror,
> tormented words, the twang of rage, strident
> voices.[4]

These were the voices of those who lived their lives without having committed to either good or evil and consequently they were denied entry to heaven or hell. They would live eternally in the antechamber to hell, along with a choir of angels who, neither rebels against God nor true to him, lived only for themselves.

Virgil then led Dante to the river Acheron, on the other side of which hell began. There, on the bank of the river, a crowd of newly dead souls was waiting to be ferried across. A boat approached with an aged man, hair all white, at its helm. This was the ferryman who, in Greek and Latin sources, was paid for the journey across the river that separated the living from the dead with the coin that had been placed in the mouth of the dead for this purpose. The boatman, the demon Charon, 'with his hot-coal eyes', swept all the dead souls into the boat, striking at any dawdler with his oar (see Plate 2 [BW]). Virgil reassured Dante that Charon's reluctance to ferry him across boded well for his future. A sudden earthquake with wind and fire shook the earth, and Dante fainted, only to awaken on the other side in limbo, the first of the nine circles of hell beneath the earth.

Virgil and Dante, we are told, entered the darkness of the first circle, where

> no tears, no weeping, only sighs
> that caused a trembling in the eternal air

could be heard.[5] It was a place of melancholy sighs. These sighs were drawn from sorrow, not from pain, among the multitudes of speechless infants, women and men.[6] None of these had sinned; some had even gained merit. But none had been baptised and none could therefore gain entry to heaven. Virgil was among them:

> They lived before the Christian age began.
> They paid no reverence, as was due to God.
> And in this number I myself am one.
> For such deficiencies, no other crime,
> we are all lost yet only suffer harm
> through living in desire, but hopelessly.[7]

At one time in the past, Virgil told Dante, he had seen a power whose head was crowned with signs of victory. Dante's readers would have known that this was Jesus Christ, who, between his death and resurrection, had descended into hell, or at least into limbo. According to Virgil, he had led away to salvation those Old Testament worthies who had there been imprisoned – Adam, Abel and Noah, Moses and Abraham, David and Israel his father, together with many others. Until then, 'no human soul had ever been redeemed.'[8] The virtuous pagans, however, had not been redeemed. And Dante soon met some of those left behind, notably the great poets of antiquity – Homer, Horace, Ovid and Lucan.

Dante walked and talked with these virtuous pagans until they reached a fine castle surrounded by seven walls with a 'lovely stream' as its moat. Passing through seven gates, they came to a verdant lawn where other virtuous pagans were gathered – the philosophers Aristotle, Socrates and Plato, various characters from the *Aeneid*, the mathematician Euclid, the astronomer Ptolemy; and noble Muslims too – the philosophers Averroes and Avicenna, and the sultan Saladin. In hell they may have been, but this was benign enough. Although Dante had them in hell, his sympathy was nonetheless with these noble souls whose misfortune was to live before the time of Christ, and who were therefore predestined to spend eternity in a hopeless longing.

Among his contemporaries, Dante was seen as having broken with the orthodox Catholic theology of limbo in two ways: first, as we will see in more detail later, in his focusing not so much on those whom Christ freed from hell but on those who were left behind; and second, in his identifying the Limbo of the Infants or Children (*limbus infantum* or *puerorum*) with the limbo of the Old Testament worthies and ancient pagans (*limbus patrum*).

The orthodox position was that there were two limbos. According to the Franciscan theologian Bonaventure (1221–74), the underworld was divided into three places for the punishment of sins after this life. The first of these was Purgatory, reserved for the punishment of venial or forgivable

sins. Next below was limbo, and below that was hell, for the punishment of mortal sins that had imperilled the soul. Limbo was further divided into two parts. In the lower part of limbo were those who had died in original sin (inherited from Adam), that is, unbaptised children (see Plate 12 [BW]). The upper limbo, also known as the Bosom of Abraham, was for those who dwelt there before the time of Christ but were delivered when Christ descended into hell. And consequently, since that time, the upper limbo had been empty.[9]

The idea of there being two limbos was made stronger by the Dominican theologian Thomas Aquinas (*c.*1225–74; Plate 7 [BW]) for, in his account of the netherworld, the two were separated by Purgatory. For Aquinas, hell had a fourfold division. One hell was the place of the damned, an abode in which the damned were both denied the vision of God and were physically tormented. Above that was another hell, a place of darkness without the vision of God but without physical torments. This hell, said Aquinas, is called 'the Limbo of the Children' (*limbus puerorum*). Above the Limbo of the Children was a further place of darkness without the vision of God but which did nonetheless include physical suffering (but from which release was possible). This place, said Aquinas, was called 'Purgatory'. Finally, above Purgatory, there was yet another hell. This too was a place of darkness without the vision of God, yet again without physical torments. This was the 'hell of the holy fathers' (*infernus sanctum patrum*). It was to this region of hell, he remarked, that Christ had descended between his death and his resurrection; he had gone no further.[10]

The Limbo of the Infants

Unbaptised deceased children were not located in a specific place, namely, limbo, until the thirteenth century. But Christian thinkers had been exercised about the fate of infants since the fourth. It was the Greek theologian Gregory of Nyssa (*c.*330–*c.*395 CE) who was the first to devote a work specifically to this issue.[11] About the point of such brief lives, he was deeply troubled: 'What wisdom, then, can we trace in the following?' he asked.

> A human being enters on the scene of life, draws in the air, beginning the process of living with a cry of pain, pays the tribute of a tear to Nature, just tastes life's sorrows, before any of its sweets have been his, before

> his feelings have gained any strength; still loose in all his joints, tender, pulpy, unset […] such an one, with no advantage over the embryo in the womb except that he has seen the air, so short-lived, dies and goes to pieces again.[12]

How are we to feel about such deaths? he wondered.

> Will a soul such as that behold its Judge? Will it stand with the rest before the tribunal? Will it undergo its trial for deeds done in life? Will it receive the just recompense by being purged, according to the Gospel utterances, in fire, or refreshed with the dew of blessing.[13]

The key issue for Gregory was the nature of the afterlife of such infants. They did not deserve the punishments reserved for the wicked. Nor did they merit the rewards of the virtuous. If rewards or punishments after death were allocated according to principles of justice, 'in what class shall he be placed who has died in infancy without having laid in this life any foundation, good or bad, whereby any return according to his deserts may be given him?'[14] Gregory was quite certain that deceased infants, having done no evil, did not deserve punishment of any kind. That said, since reward was proportional to virtue acquired during this life, the participation of the deceased infant, whose soul 'has never felt the taste of virtue', in eternal happiness was minimal.[15] Of their post-mortem location, there was no indication. Although there is a hint in Gregory of Nyssa that their post-mortem happiness might develop, the state in which they existed immediately after death was a neutral one. How all this was to be squared with the justice and goodness of God was another question. Gregory's suggestion that God providentially cut infant lives short because he foresaw the immense evils that they would commit were they to become adults, thus demonstrating the divine kindness, was perhaps not the most persuasive of arguments – then or now.

Generally, within the theology of the Greek or Eastern Church, the fate of unbaptised children was rather underdetermined. All agreed with Gregory of Nyssa that deceased infants were worthy neither of reward nor punishment, not least because they lacked a moral identity. This was in keeping with the Greek theologians' general view of the consequences of the Fall of Man, that it entailed corruption and mortality but not a human nature despoiled by sin. So there is no sense in Greek theology

that children were born in inherited sin and guilt as a consequence of the sin of Adam. On the contrary, for Gregory of Nyssa, children were born in a state of natural goodness.

However, the view that children were born sinless was significantly to change in the Latin or Western Church in the early part of the fifth century. It was then that the fate of infants became a core subject of dispute in the controversies surrounding the figures of Pelagius (*fl. c.*390–418 CE) and Augustine (354–430 CE). And it was on the battleground of the fate of infants who had died unbaptised that the question of original sin, the sin that was or wasn't inherited by all as a result of the sin of Adam, was fought out.

Pelagius was at the forefront of those who denied the doctrine of hereditary sin. Around 405 CE, before his controversy with Augustine broke out, Pelagius sided with those who declared it 'to be unjust that a soul which is born today, not from the lump of Adam, bears so ancient a sin belonging to another'.[16] It should not be countenanced, he continued, that the God who forgives human beings their own sins should impute to them those of another (i.e. of Adam). A child or a newborn baby, he declared elsewhere, cannot be held responsible for the sin of another. Evil is not born with us: 'Everything good, and everything evil, on account of which we are either laudable or blameworthy, is not born with us but done by us […] and we are procreated as without virtue, so also without vice.'[17] As Pelagius's colleague Caelestius (*fl.* fifth century CE) had rather neatly put it, 'infants are at their birth in the same state in which Adam was before the transgression.'[18] They were born as a blank sheet upon which deeds of evil or good would only later be written. Still, as Augustine remarked, Pelagius and his followers were in agreement that, without baptism, deceased infants could not enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Moreover, Pelagius knew that infants, without the stain of original sin, did not go to hell. But just where such innocent infants did go, he knew not.[19] Augustine, as we will see, did know, and he had no doubts about it.

For Pelagius and others, having innocent deceased infants paying after death in hell for the sins they did not commit was in conflict with their understanding of divine justice. Augustine, by contrast, put his emphasis not on the sins of infants but on their suffering in this life. For Augustine, it was these postnatal sufferings that, if these children were innocent at the time of their birth, counted against the justice of God. 'Do you not realize,' he asked, 'that you make God unjust when you see the punishments to which babies are subject yet you continue to declare them innocent?'[20] So

for Augustine, the sufferings of children in this life could only be explained as punishments justified by the sinful state inherited from Adam in which these children were born.

In his early work *De libero arbitrio* (On free choice of the will), Augustine had adopted a position on the fate of unbaptised infants not much different from that which he was later to oppose. If there is a life, he wrote, that is between sin and right action, 'have no fear that our Judge can pronounce a sentence that is intermediate between punishment and reward.'[21] Later, however, in the context of the debate about original sin with Pelagius, his views hardened. It is a fundamental truth of the Christian faith, he declared, that those who are born are damned unless redeemed through baptism.[22] This was simply the case regardless of age.

This was the inevitable consequence of his doctrine of original sin. Simply put, eternal damnation was the only possible outcome for those who died without the remission of original sin that baptism conferred. The unbaptised, he wrote, 'must be classed amongst those who do not believe on the Son, and therefore, if they shall depart this life without this grace, they […] shall not have life, but the wrath of God abideth on them.'[23] In short, it was only possible to be with the Devil or with Christ. Still, there was some mitigation of this harsh outcome to be found. For Augustine, the punishments of hell were proportionate to the guilt of the sinner. Moreover, only original sin, not personal sin, could be attributed to deceased infants. Consequently, their punishment would be minimal: 'such infants as quit the body without being baptized will be involved in the mildest condemnation of all.'[24]

It was Augustine's view on the destiny of unbaptised infants that was to dominate the medieval period. Pope Gregory the Great (*c.*540–604), for example, took it as read: '[T]here be some that are withdrawn from the present light,' he declared, 'before they attain to shew forth the good or evil deserts of an active life […] For they even receive everlasting torments, who never sinned by their own will.'[25] Anselm of Canterbury (*c.*1033–1109) is remembered in the modern world more for his ontological proof for the existence of God than for his view on the fate of unbaptised infants. Not surprisingly, perhaps, for it was Augustine's harsh view that he endorsed. Like Augustine, Anselm distinguished between personal sin and natural or original sin, between the personal sin that Adam committed and the sin that infected his nature as a result of this personal sin. It was this infection, natural or original sin, that he transmitted to all his descendants: 'the personal

sin of Adam passes over to all who are naturally propagated from him; and in them it is natural, or original, sin.'[26] Again, like Augustine, Anselm did not think that all individuals deserved to be tormented in hell to the same degree; sins were unequal and punishments should be correspondingly the same. So the sin of infants was less than that of Adam. Nevertheless, damned they were: 'if what I have termed original sin is a sin, then it is necessary that every man who is born with it and does not have it forgiven is condemned.'[27]

There were others, however, who tried to mitigate the apparent harshness of the Augustinian position. Peter Abelard (1079–1142), for example, believed that while the justice of God in damning unbaptised infants to hellfire could not be denied, it needed to be balanced by divine goodness. Thus, he nuanced Augustine's 'mildest condemnation of all' by distinguishing the punishment of the soul from that of the body, and assigning to deceased children only the former. For those with only original and not personal sin in addition, he declared: 'I do not think that this punishment is anything other than to endure darkness, that is, to lack the vision of the divine majesty without any hope of recovery.'[28] In short, those who died unbaptised suffered the psychological punishment of the loss of the Beatific Vision, but not physical torments. It was a distinction that Thomas Aquinas was later to formalise in terms of *poena damni* (pain of loss) in contrast to *poena sensus* (pain of sense).

This view that deceased infants suffered only the loss of the Beatific Vision and not physical torments was endorsed by Bonaventure. Unbaptised children, he believed, existed somewhere *between* the blessed and those tormented in the eternal fires of hell. They shared with the blessed the absence of any exterior or physical pain. But with the damned, they shared the privation of the vision of God in darkness: 'and so they are both happy and sad.'[29] Like those in the limbo of Dante, their lament was deep, for they knew exactly what they had lost.

For his part, Aquinas agreed with Bonaventure that those who died unbaptised did not suffer physical torments, but only the loss of the Beatific Vision. But he disagreed about the nature of their fate. How deeply, he wondered, did they feel the pain of this loss? Initially Aquinas believed that they were not unhappy. For although they knew what they had lost, they did not grieve for that which they knew was beyond their capacity to obtain. No wise man, he wrote, 'grieves for being unable to fly like a bird, or for that he is not a king or an emperor, since these things are not due to

him'.[30] However, in his later work *De malo* (On evil), Aquinas was to amend his position slightly. He now denied to children the knowledge of their loss, for the supernatural knowledge of the Beatific Vision was a consequence of faith that, lacking baptism, they did not have. In short, not only did they not lament that which was beyond their capacity to obtain, but also they could not lament the loss of that about which they could not know.[31] Moreover, he went on, they had a kind of happiness in general, the result of naturally knowing that souls were created for happiness.

The Limbo of the Fathers

Dante radically differed from his contemporaries in assigning both deceased infants and virtuous pagans to the one geographical space, namely the first circle of hell. In consigning virtuous pagans to limbo for eternity, he was also disagreeing with the mainstream theological orthodoxies which, up until that time, had consigned the virtuous pagans either downwards to hell or upwards to heaven. But Dante was at one with his contemporaries in his belief that the patriarchs and prophets of the Old Testament – Adam, Abraham, Moses, and so on – had gained salvation, and that they had done so through faith in Jesus Christ. Christ had harrowed Hades and delivered them from what was known, by the time of Thomas Aquinas, as 'the Limbo of the Fathers' (*limbus patrum*).

This doctrine of the harrowing of Hades (or hell) was that, between his death and resurrection, Christ descended into Hades and there preached to those already dead (see Plate 13 [c]). Then he led the righteous from there to Paradise or heaven, and in so doing defeated death and the powers of hell who had kept the dead imprisoned there.[32] The key New Testament texts were 1 Peter 3.19, according to which Christ went and preached to the spirits in prison, and 1 Peter 4.6, where the gospel is said to have been preached even to the dead.[33]

The most elaborate version of the harrowing of Hades is to be found in the mid-sixth-century Gospel of Nicodemus (in its earliest form after the year 555). Outside of the New Testament Gospels themselves, this was perhaps the most influential and authoritative of all early Christian writings.[34] The second part of the Gospel of Nicodemus, which dealt with Christ's descent into Hades, is extant in both Greek and two Latin versions, the latter of which were the parents of versions in every European language.[35]

According to the Greek version, prior to Christ's arrival in the underworld, John the Baptist had come proclaiming that Christ too was coming into Hades to offer salvation to all. This included not only the patriarchs and prophets but also the pagans who previously worshipped idols. The repetition in the underworld of John's earthly mission was a common theme in early Christian thought. Therefore, declared John,

> now only is the time of repentance for you, for that ye did worship idols in the vain world that is above, and for the sins which ye have committed: but at another time it is impossible that this should come to pass.[36]

And when Christ arrived at the gates of Hades soon afterwards, 'all the dead that were bound were loosed from their chains.'[37] After he had rescued Adam, Jesus said to all the dead:

> Come with me all ye, as many as have suffered death through the tree which this man [Adam] touched. For lo, I do raise you all up again through the tree of the cross. And with that he put them all forth.[38]

The underworld, we can only assume, was left empty.

Those whom Christ led into Paradise were delivered to Michael the archangel. There they met Enoch and Elijah, the only two figures in the Old Testament who never died, along with the repentant thief crucified with Jesus (named Dismas for the first time by the Gospel of Nicodemus). According to the Gospel of Luke, he was promised by Jesus, 'today you will be with me in Paradise' (Luke 23.43). Dismas reports that, when he arrived in heaven, Michael said, 'Tarry a little, for Adam the forefather of mankind cometh with the righteous, that they also may enter in.'[39]

The two Latin versions ('Latin A' and 'Latin B'), however, told a different story about whom Christ saved when he descended into Hades. Unlike in the Greek version, there is no mention of the preaching of John the Baptist to the idolaters in hell. Overall, the Latin versions appear to limit Christ's offer of salvation to the saints, and especially to the prophets and patriarchs, and (in Latin B) Eve. In Latin A, the fate of those left behind, as well as that of Satan, is unclear. By contrast, in Latin B, their fate is more certain. In the Latin A version, Jesus left Satan, and presumably also the dead not taken to Paradise, in Hades for all eternity. But in the Latin B version, there

is a significant shift. There, Satan was not kept in Hades for eternity, but was cast into the fires of hell (Tartarus):

> And behold, the Lord Jesus Christ coming in the glory of the light, in meekness, great and yet humble, bearing a chain in his hands bound therewith the neck of Satan, and also, binding his hands behind his back, cast him backward into Tartarus, and set his holy foot upon his throat and said: Throughout all ages hast thou done much evil and hast never been quiet at any time. To-day I deliver thee unto eternal fire.[40]

Satan was confined to hell.[41] In addition, Christ only took *some* of those in Hades away with him to Paradise. The remainder were 'cast down […] into Tartarus'.[42] For the Gospel of Nicodemus, then, whether Christ took all with him to Paradise (as in the Greek version), or only some (as in the Latin B version), Hades – the place to which all the dead were assigned from the time of Adam onwards – was *literally* emptied between Christ's death and his resurrection.

This matter of the salvation of the Old Testament worthies had been of crucial importance from the middle of the second century CE. For it was then that Marcion (d. *c.*160 CE) had drawn a sharp distinction between the New Testament God of love and goodness and the Old Testament God of law and evil. As a consequence, the worthies of the Old Testament were seen not as heroic precursors of Christ, but rather as villains. Thus it was not they who were saved when Christ descended into Hades. Rather, at least according to Marcion's orthodox opponent Irenaeus (*c.*130–200 CE), Marcion held that it was Cain, the Sodomites, the Egyptians, 'and all the nations who walked in all sorts of abominations' who 'were saved by the Lord, on his descending into Hades'.[43] The righteous men of the Old Testament – Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, and the other patriarchs and prophets – 'remained in Hades'.[44]

By contrast, Irenaeus held that there was no discontinuity between the Old and New Testament Gods, and that the Old Testament worthies were forerunners of Christ. Thus there was salvation for all those righteous men of the Old Testament who, even though they were sinners, hoped for Christ:

> It was for this reason, too, that the Lord descended into the regions beneath the earth, preaching His advent there also, and [declaring] the remission of sins received by those who believe in Him. Now all those

> who believed in Him, who had hope towards Him, that is, those who proclaimed His advent, and submitted to His dispensation, the righteous men, the prophets, and the patriarchs […] He remitted sins in the same way as He did to us.[45]

If the fate of the Old Testament worthies was a burning issue by the late second century CE, so too was the fate of the virtuous pagans as Christianity began intellectually to interact with Greek philosophy. Nowhere was there more of an engagement between theology and philosophy than in the Alexandria of the time of Clement (*c.*150–*c.*215 CE). According to Clement, philosophy was given to the Greeks, as was the law to the Jews, to prepare them to receive the gospel of Christ. Consequently, it was only just that those in Hades, both Jews and Gentiles, should be given the opportunity to be saved. For a righteous man, declared Clement, 'differs not, as righteous, from another righteous man, whether he be of the Law or a Greek'.[46] This did not mean that all would be saved, but it did mean that all would be given the opportunity to believe.

Clement was uncertain whether the offer of salvation made by Christ when he descended into Hades was made to all the Gentiles or only to those who were righteous. And he was unsure whether Christ descended into Hades to preach to all who were there or only to the Jews. If Christ did preach only to the Jews, Clement believed that, as here so also there, the Apostles also descended after *their* deaths to preach the gospel to those who remained and were ready to be converted. If the Lord had descended to preach the gospel to all,

> then all who believe shall be saved, although they may be of the Gentiles, on making their profession there; since God's punishments are saving and disciplinary, leading to conversion, and choosing rather the repentance than the death of a sinner.

Indeed, he suggested, souls there, 'although darkened by passions, when released from their bodies, are able to perceive more clearly, because of their being no longer obscured by the paltry flesh'.[47] In either case, both Jews and Gentiles were offered a chance at salvation.

Origen (*c.*185–*c.*254 CE), Clement's successor as head of the Christian Catechetical School in Alexandria, endorsed his approach to Christ's descent into Hades. Late in the second century, the pagan philosopher

Celsus had attacked the tradition that Christ had descended into Hades: 'You [Christians] will not, I suppose, say of him [Christ], that, after failing to gain over those who were in this world, he went to Hades to gain over those who were there.' Origen was one Christian who wanted to say precisely that. He not only rebuffed the suggestion that Christ's mission had been a failure on earth, but went on to defend Christ's descent into Hades:

> when He became a soul, without the covering of the body, He dwelt among those souls which were without bodily covering, converting such of them as were willing to Himself, or those whom He saw, for reasons known to Him alone, to be better adapted to such a course.[48]

Origen did not declare that all were converted. In fact, the implication of the passage above is that there remained some who were unwilling. This did not, however, mean that they remained in Hades. For Origen also made a clear distinction between Hades and Gehenna, that dark place of eternal and inextinguishable fire.[49] Thus, those who were not willing to be converted may have descended into Gehenna (hell) for punishment, and again Hades was permanently emptied. What we can conclude is that, among those who were converted, there were Gentiles as well as Jews.

'He descended into hell'

Such agonising over the fate of the dead before Christ was to converge in Augustine. In 414 CE, Augustine received a letter from an old friend, Bishop Evodius of Uzalis. He asked Augustine just who were the spirits in prison to whom Christ went and preached after his death (1 Pet. 3.19), such that they were all delivered from darkness and punishment and such that 'from the time of the resurrection of the Lord judgment is expected, Hell having then been completely emptied'.[50] It was a question that also perplexed Augustine, and his opinions were anything but fixed.

Still, of one thing Augustine was in no doubt. It is established beyond question, he wrote, that after his death, Christ descended into hell (*in infernum*).[51] That he had done so had been a commonplace in Christian thought since the first century CE. In 359, it was incorporated into a creed for the first time at the Council of Sirmium. In the so-called 'Dated Creed', it is said that Christ descended into the underworld and the gatekeepers of

Hades shuddered.[52] Augustine also understood Christ's descent as including the deliverance of those there. But he thought it presumptuous to say who these were. He was not unhappy to count Adam among them. This was agreed to, he wrote, 'by almost the entire Church'.[53] Some, he knew, wished to include the Old Testament worthies. And he was not unsympathetic to the idea that the virtuous pagans should be saved, for 'they may be justly held up as models in all the other virtues [except the worship of one God] of frugality, self-denial, chastity, sobriety', and so on.[54]

The stumbling block for Augustine, however, was the New Testament parable of the rich man and Lazarus (Luke 16.19–31). According to this, there was a rich man who was dressed in purple and fine linen and who ate sumptuously every day. At his gate lay a poor man called Lazarus, whose sores the dogs came and licked and who longed only to eat the scraps that fell from the rich man's table (see Plate 4 [BW]). When the poor man died, he was carried away to the Bosom of Abraham by the angels. The rich man also died, was buried and went down to Hades. There, while being tormented, he looked up and saw Abraham far away with Lazarus by his side. He called out, 'Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am in agony in these flames.' But Abraham said:

> Remember that during your lifetime you received good things and Lazarus only evil things. Now he is comforted here and you are in agony. Besides all this, there is a great chasm fixed between you and us and no one can cross from Hades to us.

On the basis of this text, Augustine wanted to distinguish Abraham's Bosom and Hades. He could not see how both Abraham and Lazarus could be in a place of pain and suffering. Moreover, he thought it absurd that only Abraham and Lazarus were 'in that bosom of wondrous repose' before Christ descended into hell. In addition, he thought it likely that the prophets and patriarchs were there also, although he admitted to not understanding what benefit was conferred on *them* by Christ when he loosed the pains of hell. Thus, on the grounds that Abraham had said that a great gulf was fixed, he concluded that 'the bosom of that glorious infelicity was not any integral part of Hell'. He wished rather that Scripture had said that Christ had gone there: 'if sacred Scripture had said, without naming Hell and its pains, that Christ when He died went to that bosom of

Abraham, I wonder if anyone would have dared to say that He "descended into Hell".[55] Still, as Augustine admits, Scripture *did* make mention of hell and its pains, and there was no reason to think that Christ went except to save its occupants. Even granting that Christ did descend into hell for that reason, Augustine was still uncertain whether 'He did save all whom He found […] or some whom He judged worthy of that favour'.[56] On one point, however, Augustine did not waver. Those who had died since the resurrection of Christ and who had not embraced salvation in this life would have no opportunity to do so after their deaths. Their eternal destiny was fixed at the point of death.

Having said that, by 417 CE, in his letter to Dardanus, a high official in Gaul, Augustine had further refined his position. For now he believed that there was not a great chasm between Abraham's Bosom and Hades, but rather that there were two regions in hell, 'one for the suffering and one for the souls in repose'.[57] Abraham's Bosom had now become part of hell. And it was only to the Bosom of Abraham that Christ had descended in order 'to rescue those who were there to be rescued'.[58] Moreover, Augustine now equated the Bosom of Abraham with the Paradise into which the repentant thief was received on the same day that Christ died. Augustine also became much clearer now about who was saved as a result of Christ's descent into what had now become an upper region of hell. Among those there to be rescued were the Old Testament worthies. They 'were also to be saved by the same faith to be revealed in due time'.[59] So, by shifting Abraham's Bosom from being a place separated from Hades by a great gulf to being a part of Hades, Augustine now had a genuine reason for Christ's descent into hell, namely to rescue those who were in its 'upper part', the souls in repose, but not to assist those suffering in the lower region of hell. They were left to their fate. In his last work *De haeresibus* (On heresies), Augustine went as far as to declare it a heresy to believe that, on Christ's descending into hell (*ad inferos*), the unbelievers believed and all who dwelt there were freed (*liberatos*).[60] So it was only those in Abraham's Bosom, later to be the Limbo of the Fathers, that were saved when Christ descended into hell.

In spite of Augustine's position becoming the dominant one, the tradition that *all* were saved as a result of Christ's descent was still to be found at the end of the sixth century. Thus, Pope Gregory the Great wrote to two clergy of the Church at Constantinople about their preaching that Christ at his descent into hell had saved *all* those there who had acknowledged him as God and delivered them from the pains due to them. He repeated

Augustine's suggestion that it was heretical to think so, encouraging them to think differently. '[H]old ye nothing,' he declared,

> but what the true faith teaches through the Catholic Church: namely, that the Lord in descending into Hell rescued from infernal durance those only whom while living in the flesh He preserved through His grace in faith and good conduct.[61]

Unlike Augustine, Gregory did not distinguish regions of hell, nor did he explicitly exclude from salvation at least some of the virtuous pagans who did good works. In the middle of the eighth century, in spite of the authority of both Augustine and Gregory, Clement the Scot was condemned by a synod at Rome for flouting their authority by contending 'that Christ, descending to the lower world, set free all who were imprisoned there, believers and unbelievers, those who praised God and the worshippers of idols'.[62]

Still, if not *all* were saved, what of the salvation of at least *some* of the pagans, especially those who lived lives of great goodness? The tradition that virtuous pagans were saved by Christ's descent into hell remained alive in medieval theology, even if only held by a minority. Thus, for example, in the late seventh century, Anastasios of Sinai tells of a tradition that a scholar who disparaged Plato was visited by him in a dream. Plato asked him to cease his slighting of him for 'that I was a sinful man I do not deny, but when Christ descended to Hades, no one believed in Him before I did'.[63] However, with the increasing interest in classical traditions in the twelfth century, and the engagement of Christian theology once again with the traditions of Greek philosophy, the issue of the salvation of the virtuous pagans returned to the theological agenda. This was especially the result of the debate initiated by Peter Abelard.

It was in the early twelfth century that Peter Abelard, in his *Sic et non* (Yes and no), summed up the orthodox state of play on a number of issues around the fate of the pre-Christian worthies. In one chapter, he reviewed the question of the salvation of Adam. He found no sources that denied the salvation of the first man. On the question of whether Christ had liberated all the souls that he found in hell on his descent there, he cited a work of Origen to the effect that Christ had freed all. And he followed this with a similar claim from a late fourth-century commentary on Paul's epistle to the Romans that he attributed to Ambrose (*c.*339–97 CE): 'Indeed men sinned, Jews as much as Greeks, for which reason the death of Christ was

an advantage to all; and at this time, this must be believed and observed, that he taught and freed all from hell [*et de inferno eripuit*].[64] Nevertheless, Abelard found that a strong majority of authorities were opposed to the view that Christ freed all from Hades and supported the view that Christ had rescued only those who hoped and believed that he would come to bring salvation.

But Abelard was not willing to leave it there. He had no doubt that the virtuous pagans had been saved. Thus, in his *Theologia Christiana* (Christian theology), he argued that the virtuous pagans, and particularly Plato and his successors in the third-century school of Neoplatonism, had come to the doctrine of the Trinity through the use of natural reason.[65] This was a step too far for Bernard of Clairvaux (1090–1153), for whom knowledge of the Trinity was a consequence of revelation and not reason. He ensured that Abelard's views were condemned at the Council of Sens in 1141.

Be that as it may, for his part, Thomas Aquinas agreed with Bernard against Abelard that the doctrine of the Trinity was a matter of revelation and not of reason. But, like Abelard, he was sympathetic to the plight of the virtuous pagans. Of Christ's descent into hell, he had no doubt. Thus, in his *Compendium theologiae* (Compendium of theology), he declared that, as Christ's body was interred in the earth, 'so also his soul descended into hell', although not to suffer punishment there. Christ descended into hell in order to free from punishment those who were kept there because of Adam, 'our first parent'. That is to say, he liberated only those who had inherited original sin. But he left there 'those who were obligated to punishments for their own sins'.[66]

In his earlier *Summa theologica* (Summary of theology), it is clear that those who were rescued and those left behind were in different parts of hell. According to Aquinas, before Christ's coming, the saints were at rest in Abraham's Bosom, where they were not punished. Nevertheless, it had a lack of rest attached to it, since the repose of those there was incomplete because they had not seen God. So in that sense it could also be called hell.[67] Before Christ's coming, Abraham's Bosom was also the Limbo of the Fathers. It was distinguished from the lower part of hell not only by its being a temporary rather than eternal place, but also by its not being a place of physical punishments:

> For those who are in hell receive diverse punishments according to the diversity of their guilt, so that those who are condemned are consigned

> to darker and deeper parts of hell according as they have been guilty of graver sins, and consequently the holy Fathers in whom there was the least amount of sin were consigned to a higher and less darksome part than all those who were condemned to punishment.[68]

However, after Christ's coming, the repose of the saints was completed through their then seeing God. This place of rest is still called Abraham's Bosom, declared Aquinas, although it could no longer be considered as part of hell or as the Limbo of the Fathers. Whereas the separate Limbo of the Infants remained after the death of Christ as the repository of those who died without baptism in original sin, the Limbo of the Fathers was emptied when Christ descended into it. But just who did Aquinas think was in the Limbo of the Fathers awaiting the redemption offered by Christ? To answer this, we need to turn to Aquinas's *De veritate* (On truth) and his distinction between *explicit* and *implicit* faith.

According to Aquinas, the faithful in every age must believe that God exists and that he exercises his providence over human affairs. But not all were bound to believe everything *explicitly* in every age, only those who were appointed teachers in those matters. Even the teachers were not bound to believe everything explicitly in every age, for there was a gradual progress in faith in the human race. Since the coming of Christ, leaders were bound to believe all matters of faith *explicitly*. However, before sin came into the world, it was not even necessary to believe in a redeemer yet to come, since at that time there was no need of such a figure. Before and after the Fall, it was necessary for the leaders to have explicit faith in the Trinity. But the ordinary people among the Jews needed only implicit faith contained either in their belief in the patriarchs and prophets or in their belief in divine providence. While the Old Testament worthies ranked among the teachers, there were no such teachers among the virtuous pagans. Thus, all the Gentiles counted only as ordinary people. Therefore, declared Aquinas, 'it was enough for them to have implicit faith in the Redeemer.'[69] Even so, perhaps there were instances of explicit faith for, he continued, 'it is likely that the mystery of our redemption was revealed to many Gentiles before Christ's coming.'[70] For Aquinas, on this account, Abraham's Bosom before the coming of Christ was pretty well populated, with Jews as well as Gentiles. And among the latter were the learned Greeks and virtuous pagans.

Unlike Dante, for whom the fathers and the children shared a limbo, Aquinas placed Purgatory between the Limbo of the Fathers above and

the Limbo of the Children below. In spite of their virtues, Dante did not allow his virtuous pagans to escape limbo. They lacked what Aquinas would have called explicit belief. As Virgil declared, '[a]nd for no crime, save lack of faith, I lost the heavenly sky.'[71] In contrast, Aquinas's limbo was emptied. The *implicit* belief of those imprisoned there was sufficient for their salvation when Christ descended into that part of hell between his death and resurrection.

Thus, by the time of Aquinas, with the exception of Dante, there was general agreement on the fate of those who had lived before Christ. This was that all had been located in the Limbo of the Fathers and that this place beneath the earth had been emptied. This was either the consequence of *all* those who had been located there having been saved as a result of Christ's descent into hell, or it was the result of *some* of those located there having been saved, the remainder of them having left limbo and descended further into the lower region(s) of hell. In either case, there was a consensus that Adam and the Old Testament worthies had been saved.

About the fate of the virtuous pagans, however, there was much less clarity. All were agreed that, in terms of their virtuous works, they were more than worthy of salvation. But were good works sufficient, or was faith in Jesus Christ necessary for redemption? And if faith was necessary for salvation, was implicit rather than explicit faith sufficient to merit it? On this, opinions remained divided. Eventually, these became issues central to the Protestant Reformation in the sixteenth century. By that time the question had become focused not on the fate of those who had died without baptism or before Christ, but on the destiny of those who had lived since, both within and outside the Church, and on the means by which their salvation had been effected, whether by faith or by works. In the meantime, alongside the question of which persons are saved and which damned, there ran the question of what part of those persons is saved or damned – bodies, souls, both or neither?

Chapter Three

Souls and Bodies

> [B]ecause the man cannot be said to exist when the body is dissolved, and indeed entirely scattered abroad, even though the soul continue by itself – it is absolutely necessary that the end of a man's being should appear in some reconstitution of the two together, and of the same living being. And as this follows of necessity, there must by all means be a resurrection of the bodies which are dead, or even entirely dissolved, and the same men must be formed anew.
>
> Athenagoras, *De resurrectione mortuorum* (*c.*180 CE)

Composite creatures

Athenagoras, known as 'the Athenian philosopher', composed the earliest Christian philosophical work on the resurrection of the dead around 180 CE.[1] This work, *De resurrectione mortuorum* (On the resurrection of the dead), was directed at those among the cultured, both Christians and others, who thought the resurrection of the body at best unintelligible, at worst incredible. Its aim was to convince the doubters that it was both possible for God to raise the dissolved or dispersed bodies of the dead on the Day of Judgement, and that justice required that God should do so.

But this work was much more than that. It was also the first essay in the Christian doctrine of man. Athenagoras declared that man was a composite being consisting of a mortal body and an immortal soul: '[T]he whole nature of men in general is composed of an immortal soul and a body which was fitted to it in the creation.'[2] Athenagoras's key argument was to the effect that, since it was God's intention that human beings should live forever, his plan would be unfulfilled were it the case that only the soul lived forever. 'Man, therefore,' he wrote,

> who consists of the two parts, must continue for ever. But it is impossible for him to continue unless he rise again […] The conclusion is unavoidable, that, along with the interminable duration of the soul, there will be a perpetual continuance of the body according to its proper nature.[3]

Importantly, unlike the resurrection of the body, the immortality of the soul did not have to be argued for. In spite of the absence of the idea of the immortality of the soul in the documents that made up the New Testament (*c.*50–100 CE), by the late second century this doctrine had been happily absorbed from the Greek Platonic tradition into the Christian understanding of man. Importantly, however, early Christianity defined itself against that same tradition by its passionate commitment to the doctrine of the resurrection of the body. In so doing, Christianity was able to line up its philosophical understanding of the nature of man as both body and soul with its commitment to a story of life both immediately after death and after the Day of Judgement. Christian anthropology (the doctrine of man) and Christian eschatology (the doctrine of the last things) coalesced. This was, as we will see, both a theological asset and a liability.

To argue for the resurrection of the body was no small thing. Plato (429–347 BCE) had, to all intents and purposes, opposed body and soul in terms of the mortality of the former and the immortality of the latter. 'So it appears,' he wrote in the *Phaedo*, 'that when death comes to a man, the mortal part of him dies, but the immortal part retires at the approach of death and escapes unharmed and indestructible.'[4] Thus, the soul will continue to exist in the next world, but the body will not. Plato argued for the immortality of the soul for philosophical reasons. But it was necessitated too by the demands of justice. For Plato, at least some souls were sufficiently evil to merit an eternity of punishment after death. So to Plato belongs the (perhaps dubious) privilege of being the first to argue for the eternal punishment of the wicked.

That said, the fate of the soul in the next world depended not only on vices acquired and virtues nurtured in this one. According to Plato's *Phaedo*, when a person died, his own guardian spirit led him to the place of judgement, whence, escorted by a spirit guide, he proceeded to the underworld. Wise and disciplined souls followed their guide, but the soul that was 'emotionally' attached to its body hovered around it for a long time, only to

be finally led away by its guardian spirit after much resistance and suffering. When it reached the same place as the virtuous souls, it was shunned and avoided by all and wandered alone in utter desolation until, after a certain time, it was carried away to its 'proper habitation'.

There were many places set aside within the earth for the four categories of the souls of the dead. First, those who lived a neutral life set out for Lake Acheron, where they underwent purification from and absolution for the sins they had committed (a kind of Platonic Purgatory). Next, those who on account of their sins were judged to be incurable were thrown into Tartarus, from which they never emerged. There were others, thirdly, who were judged guilty of great sins but were nonetheless deemed curable. They too were cast into Tartarus, but were washed out after a year. Swept down the river of Cocytus (if they were murderers) or down Pyriphlegethon (if they had offended their parents), they came past Lake Acheron. There they cried out to their victims for permission to enter the lake. If those whom they had wronged rejected their pleas, they were swept away again into Tartarus. Finally, those who were adjudged to have spent lives of holiness were set free from confinement beneath the earth and travelled upwards to a pure abode on the earth's surface. Of these, 'such as have purified themselves sufficiently by philosophy live thereafter altogether without bodies, and reach habitations even more beautiful.'[5] Freedom from anxiety in this life about one's fate in the next can be obtained by forgoing bodily pleasure and adornment, and embracing the pursuit of knowledge, self-control, goodness, courage, liberality and truth.

For Plato, in spite of their immateriality, souls seemed nonetheless to have a quasi-materiality. After death, they were 'located' below, on or above the earth. In the *Gorgias*, for example, souls appeared at a crossroads from which two paths led, the one to the Isles of the Blessed, the other to Tartarus. The virtuous were sent straight to the Isles of the Blessed, the wicked to Tartarus, the incurable for eternal, the curable for temporary punishments. Those souls capable of cure were benefited on arrival in Tartarus by a Platonic 'abominable fancy'. There they saw the incurable souls

> suffering throughout eternity the greatest and most excruciating and terrifying tortures because of their misdeeds, literally suspended there as examples in the prison house in Hades, a spectacle and a warning to any evildoers who from time to time arrive.[6]

Similarly, in Plato's *Republic*, souls retained a form of corporeality. But there, the issue was further complicated by Plato's apparent endorsement of reincarnation. According to this, at the time of death, the soul left the body and travelled to a meadow where there were two openings in the earth and two in the heavens. The first two openings were for those entering or leaving heaven, the other two for those entering or leaving the underworld. Ascending from the underworld were souls 'full of dust and squalor', while descending from heaven were souls 'clean and pure'.[7] Each group spoke with the other about their experiences. Those from heaven spoke of the visions and delights of a beauty beyond words. Those from beneath the earth told of the dreadful things suffered and seen in their time there. Each group had spent at least a thousand years in heaven or the underworld. At the end of this time, some of those beneath the earth who were due for release were refused their freedom by the mouth of the underworld which 'bellowed when any one of the incurably wicked or of those who had not completed their punishment tried to come up'.[8] Savage men of fiery aspect carried some away to be further punished, others to be thrown into Tartarus.

Those who were allowed to ascend from beneath the earth joined those who had descended from the heavens in the meadow. They all then travelled to a pillar of light, brighter and purer than a rainbow. This was the spindle of the lady of Necessity, around which the spheres of the cosmos turned. There they took part in a lottery for priority in choosing their next life. The choice was theirs, but once made they were bound by the lady of Necessity to that life. Some switched from humans to animals, and vice versa.

When all the souls had chosen their next lives by the order of their lots, they were assigned a guardian spirit to help them through life. Passing under the throne of Necessity, they travelled (literally 'Lethe-wards') to the Plane of Oblivion, where the River of Forgetfulness (the Lethe) flowed. They were all required to drink a measure of the water. As each soul drank, it forgot all things. This explains why we don't remember our former lives. After they had fallen asleep, each soul was suddenly wafted this way or that, 'upwards to their birth like shooting stars'.[9]

In sum, in the Platonic tradition, the soul was immortal; it was assessed immediately after death for the moral state that it had attained in its embodied life, and it was accordingly rewarded or punished temporarily or (in some cases) permanently. These were all themes that were to be absorbed into the Christian tradition. Christianity also retained the Platonic ambivalence about the 'corporeal' nature of the soul. On the one hand, the Christian

tradition accorded to the soul the sort of quasi-corporeality that allowed it a geographical location after death, either above or below the earth (and on occasion the possible post-mortem transition from the one to the other). Souls also bore, as it were, 'physical' signs. They took on bodily aspects. As Caroline Bynum has pointed out, 'Souls were gendered and ranked, bearing with them the marks of occupation, status, religious vocation, even martyrdom.'[10] This quasi-corporeality of the soul enabled Christianity often to underplay the necessity of body to personal identity, and thus to focus the afterlife on the destiny of the individual immediately after death rather than after the end of the world. It was also this quasi-corporeality that allowed the soul to be depicted as leaving the body (see Plate 14 [BW]), to be spatially located somewhere and to experience quasi-physical rewards and punishments after death. It could even be weighed on the Last Day (see Plate 15 [C]).

On the other hand, complicating matters again, Christianity also endorsed the idea of the 'incorporeal' nature of the soul that allowed only for 'psychological' rewards and punishments after death. On this account, the soul required a resurrected body on the Last Day to receive the necessary merited 'physical' rewards or punishments, in addition to the 'psychological' ones that the soul had already experienced.

Although Christianity was to adopt the Platonic doctrine of the immortality of the soul, it did so with two qualifications. The first of these went to the origin of the soul, the second to the conviction that, after the Last Day, the soul would be reunited with its body.

The origin of the soul

In the Platonic understanding of the soul, there was no point in time when the individual soul did not exist. That is, not only did the soul continue to exist into the infinite future, but it had done so from the infinite past. Moreover, it had done so and would forever do so in a successive myriad of reincarnations. In the Platonic tradition generally (Plato's view that some souls were sent to Hades forever being a notable exception), souls endlessly ascended from below or descended from above to be incarnated in new earthly bodies.

By contrast, Christianity did not endorse the doctrine of successive incarnations of the same soul. In part at least, that it did not do so was

because, although it endorsed the existence of the soul into the eternal future, it could not do so into the eternal past. According to the Christian tradition, souls had not existed from eternity. Rather, there was a time when all individual souls were created, and before which they did not exist. It was also because, unlike the Platonic tradition that the world along with the souls in it had existed from and would continue until eternity, Christianity supported the belief that the world had had a beginning and would have an end. Thus, the Platonic doctrine of the eternity of the world and of the souls within it conflicted with a Christian doctrine of Creation to the effect that there was a point at which God created the world, prior to which nothing at all, including souls, existed. The Platonic tradition conflicted too with a Christian doctrine of the last things. According to this, there was a time to come in the future in which, while souls would continue to exist, the world would not. As a consequence, Christianity had to give an account of the origin of souls that squared itself both with its doctrine of creation out of nothing (*ex nihilo*) and with its doctrine of the end of history. In short, it needed an account of souls that was in accord with the view that there was a time when the world was not, and that there would be a time when the world was no longer.

The question of the origin of the soul was a complicated one. Even Augustine, never backward in being forward about most things, found it difficult to answer. 'Many are perplexed by questions concerning the soul,' he wrote in a letter to Jerome in 415 CE, 'and I confess that I am of this number.'[11] The question was not merely an 'academic' one and thus unimportant. It mattered theologically. For it went to the key theological issue of how the sin of Adam had been transmitted to his descendants. In this letter and in his work on the freedom of the will, written some 20 years earlier, Augustine had outlined the three possible options in the debate at that time, none of which he felt able to support. The first of these, known as traducianism, was the view that all souls originated from the first soul of Adam. Put simply, the soul, along with the body, in succeeding generations, was transmitted with the male seed to the woman during sexual intercourse. The second, creationism, was the view that God created new souls every time a foetus was formed in the womb and placed these souls into the developing bodies there. The third held that all souls were created at the time of Creation and these pre-existent souls were either sent by God into bodies or fell into them as a result of fault of their own.[12]

Those Christian theologians who were sympathetic to the Platonic tradition of the opposition between the material body and the immaterial soul were generally also sympathetic to the second and third of these options. Thus, they viewed traducianism (probably rightly) as having far too materialistic a conception of the soul. However that may be, in contrast to the Platonic tradition, all were in agreement that, although there would be no time in the future when the soul would not be, there was a time in the past when it was not. For reasons we will explore in more detail later, this was theologically and philosophically inelegant. In varying the Platonic notion of a soul that had no beginning and no end, it opened up a range of possibilities, all of which would be canvassed and all of which would complicate the Christian account of immortality: of a soul with a beginning at the time of the creation of the world, but no end; with a beginning at the time of conception, but no end; and, finally (among those unsympathetic to Platonism), with both a beginning and an end (at the time of death).

Supporters of the position that the soul pre-existed its time of conception in the womb were always in the minority. Its major proponent was Origen. He attempted not only to square the doctrine of the pre-existence of the soul with the Christian doctrine of Creation, but to read (very much against the grain) the Genesis story of the Creation and Fall of Man in the Garden of Eden in terms of it.[13] For him, it was a story not about Adam but about each of us. Thus, declared Origen, 'we must suppose, therefore, that in the beginning [before the Creation of the world] God made as large a number of rational and intelligent beings […] as he foresaw would be sufficient.'[14] As a consequence of the misuse of free will, souls fell from eternity into time, from the intelligible into the ethereal, aerial or terrestrial realm. As Origen put it:

> Some sinned deeply and became daemons, others less and became angels; others still less and became archangels […] But there remained some souls who had not sinned so greatly as to become daemons, nor on the other hand so lightly as to become angels. God therefore made the present world and bound the soul to the body as a punishment.[15]

Origen solved the problem of how incorporeal souls could be located in the world and move around in it by his theory of the vehicles of the soul. According to this, at the time of its fall, each soul was clothed in some form

of matter – ethereal, aerial or terrestrial – fitted to and changing according to the changing nature of the soul inhabited by it. This body enabled the soul to move up or down, from heavenly to earthly to subterranean regions. In principle, according to Origen, all souls could eventually return to the communion with God that they had before the Fall. Then:

> the mind will no longer be conscious of anything besides or other than God, but will think God and see God and hold God and God will be the mode and measure of its every movement; and in this way God will be all to it.[16]

This was very much a Christian version of the Platonic soul's eternal contemplation of the Good, and was to become the Beatific Vision of later Christian tradition.

If Origen was successful in getting around the issue of the location of a disembodied soul, he was less successful in giving an account of the resurrection of the terrestrial body on the Day of Judgement. In fact, he couldn't do so; nor did he attempt to. Rather, he invoked Paul's distinction in his First Letter to the Corinthians (15.44) between the natural body that was sown and the spiritual body that would rise again. By Paul's spiritual body, Origen understood the heavenly or ethereal body, 'with corruption banished and mortality laid aside'.[17] So rather than define the Christian doctrine of the resurrection of the dead against Greek philosophy, Origen's account of the vehicles of the soul enabled him to align the two traditions. Origen was thus very much the Christianised Platonist, embedding Christianity in Platonism, rather than vice versa. More particularly, for Origen as for many Christianised Platonists, the resurrection of the physical body on the Last Day sat awkwardly with the Platonist view that embodiment was the consequence of a fall, something not to be united with for eternity but to be liberated from forever.

This Platonic distaste for embodiment flowed generally into those parts of Christianity that saw the flesh as a prime cause of sin and its physical mortification as a key moment in Christian spirituality. Only by the subjugating of the flesh could the soul spiritually flourish. But more particularly, it also generated eschatologies that, as in the case of Origen, significantly reframed the doctrine of the resurrection of the body in spiritual terms. In so doing, these eschatologies generated accounts of life after death that paid scant attention to the resurrection of the body on the

Day of Judgement. Moreover, with his view that those souls not sufficiently pure to ascend to God would be reborn in another age to continue the process of purification, Origen came as close as was possible to a Christian doctrine of reincarnation.

Origen's account of the pre-existence of the soul gained little purchase within the Christian tradition. It was declared a heresy at the Second Council of Constantinople in 553. There was the occasional resurgence of support in the medieval period, and a minor flowering among Platonists in the seventeenth century.[18] But that century also saw the beginnings of a European scepticism more inclined to argue for the mortality of the soul after death than for its immortality before birth. It was only late in the nineteenth century that intellectual interest was again taken in the pre-existence and reincarnation of the soul. As we will see in Chapter 7, this was the consequence not of a resurgent Platonism, but of the arrival in the West of analogous ideas from the Hindu and Buddhist traditions.[19]

If Augustine was uncertain about the doctrine of the pre-existence of the soul in spite of his own Platonic inclinations, he was less so about traducianism, the theory that souls were transmitted in or along with the male seed. This was not least because it lined up better than the other alternatives with his belief that original sin was similarly transmitted with the male seed from Adam to all his descendants.[20] If Jerome is to be believed, traducianism had no shortage of supporters at the beginning of the fifth century: 'This is the view of Tertullian, Apollinaris and most Western writers [*maxima pars Occidentalium*],' he declared.[21] According to Tertullian, who was its main proponent in the West, the seed of the soul breathed first into Adam by God amalgamated with Adam's bodily seed, 'so that even now the two substances, although diverse from each other, flow forth simultaneously in a united channel'.[22] Thus, all human souls come from the first man, Adam, along with original sin. Do we not, asked Tertullian, 'in that very heat of extreme gratification when the generative fluid is ejected, feel that somewhat of our soul has gone from us?'[23] This makes a little more sense (although perhaps not much more) when we know that for Tertullian the soul is made up of tiny material particles (although not divisible into them).

Jerome's claim about the dominance of traducianism was probably an exaggeration. For we know that many more supported the view that the soul was created by God at the very moment of conception than supported traducianism. Creationism dominated Eastern Christianity and, in spite

of the lack of clear endorsement from Augustine, it was to become the dominant Catholic understanding of the origin of souls within the medieval scholastic tradition. Aquinas, in the mistaken belief that he was quoting Augustine, laid out an agreed Catholic position in the thirteenth century:

> We do not believe in the fiction of Origen that human souls were created at the beginning with other intellectual natures, nor that they are procreated together with their bodies by coition, as the Luciferians with Cyril, and certain Latin writers have presumed to maintain. But we affirm that the body alone is begotten by sexual procreation, and that after the formation of the body the soul is created and infused.[24]

Still, this was by no means the end of the matter. The debate between traducianists, creationists and others was reignited during the Reformation period. Thus, for example, in 1601 the English natural philosopher Nicholas Hill reported on some 23 theories of the soul's origin.[25] Lutherans generally adhered to traducianism, while Calvinists drifted towards creationism. Both were more concerned with the origin of sin in the soul than the origin of the soul itself. And all – Catholics, Calvinists, Lutherans and Anglicans – felt the need for 'soulidarity' against those who doubted its immortality or even its very existence. This was the cutting edge of the debate then. The number of works in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries arguing for the soul's immortality into eternity far outnumbered those devoted to the specifics of its beginnings. Of these, *The Immortality of the Soul* by the English Platonist Henry More (who, incidentally, supported the pre-existence of the soul) in 1659 was the most convincing example. At 459 pages, More's work was both exhaustive and exhausting. As Don Allen remarks, 'When an atheist or melancholy Christian had digested More's mathematical analysis of the soul's nature and immortality, he undoubtedly regarded all previous rhetorical, philosophical, or biblical demonstrations as futile and hopelessly unconvincing.'[26] Or he was perhaps beyond caring.

Time and eternity

The issue of the immortality of the soul was dependent too on the issue of the relationship between time and eternity. Indeed, however we conceive of the afterlife, this relationship is an absolutely crucial one. It will play

out into modern times, transformed into the issue of whether moral and spiritual progress is possible in the afterlife. To begin, we need to distinguish two forms of eternity, each of which has a different relationship to time, as suggested by Augustine and elaborated by Aquinas. The everyday experience of time is of a present moment receding into the past and being replaced by the future. In this case, eternity is a never-ending succession of such moments extending into infinity. By contrast, the second form of eternity is outside of time and consequently non-successive. God's experience of eternity is of this kind.[27] And it belongs only to God. But angels and the souls that are saved share in it, to the extent that they share in the divine immutability (from which God's eternity derives) and enjoy the Beatific Vision (see Plate 19 [BW]).[28] Still, even so, the blessed can continue to participate in successive time if they desire. Thus the blessed live in what Aquinas called an 'aeviternity', occupying a state between time and eternity, or, perhaps better, they partake of both time and eternity.[29] 'Aeviternity' applies however only to the saved and not to the damned. In contrast to the blessed, the damned in hell have no share in the divine eternity but only a share in successive eternity. They will continue to suffer eternal punishments in hell into the infinite future. 'The fire of hell', declared Aquinas, is called eternal 'only because it never ends.'[30]

Thus, we can now add to our earlier discussion of the immortality of souls their relation to eternity. First the souls of the blessed will participate in the non-successive and still eternity of God. This is the eternity to which the Christian mystics aspire in the here and now, finding in their present experience of the divine a foretaste of the timeless eternity yet to come. Second, the souls of the blessed will also participate in the successive eternity of heaven. Like souls, therefore, heaven had a beginning but will have no end. In contrast to the blessed, the damned will dwell only in the successive eternity of hell, which, like heaven, also had a beginning but will have no end.[31] The world, along with the souls within it, had a beginning. But there will be a Last Day when Christ returns to judge the living and the dead. Then, the world, if not the souls within it, will end. Thus, the destiny of the dead is not only embedded within a story about the fate of the soul immediately after death, but in a cosmic history that, unlike the Platonic tradition of infinite world cycles, sees the world not only as having a divinely created beginning but also a divinely designated ending.

All of which leads us to the second qualification that Christianity made to the Platonic doctrine of the immortality of the soul. This was

that, after the Last Day, the soul would be reunited with its body. It was this resurrected earthly body that would go forward into eternity, and that would partake of both time and eternity. Here, Christianity was the inheritor of a Jewish tradition that, unlike Platonism, viewed the human individual as a psycho-physical unity and, far from viewing embodiment as a misfortune, valued it as the result of divine intention. Embodiment, like the Creation itself, was viewed as a good. More philosophically, this meant that embodiment (in some form) was a crucial part of personal identity, and resurrected bodies a theological necessity.

Resurrected bodies

Within the early Christian tradition, the resurrection of the body was part of a larger apocalyptic story. This was a cosmic narrative to the effect that Christ was the expected Messiah who would usher in the end times, that he had been raised from the dead and had ascended into heaven, that he would come again and complete the establishment of God's Kingdom, that he would judge the living and the resurrected dead, and that some would receive eternal happiness and others eternal misery. Until towards the end of the first century CE, the expectation within early Christianity was that these events were imminent. With the exception of Christ's role in all this, Christian expectations of the future were in accord with those of most other Jewish groups of the time. This was a context in which the continuing existence of the individual immediately after death had little purchase.

Two New Testament texts set the pattern for later elaborations of the last things. The first of these was the 'Little Apocalypse' in the Gospels of Mark, Luke and Matthew. The last of these (Matt. 24.1–25.46) describes the final events of world history as they were foreshadowed in the Old Testament book of Daniel. First among these events will be the rise of a series of false prophets pretending to be the Messiah. The abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel (11.31), will then be set up in the holy place. Then will follow the Second Coming:

> all the tribes of the earth […] will see 'the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven' [Dan. 7.13] with power and great glory. And he will send out his angels with a loud trumpet call, and they will gather his elect from the four winds. (Matt. 24.30–1)

All the nations will then be gathered before him and, on the basis of their love for others, 'he will separate people one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats, and he will put the sheep at his right hand and the goats at his left' (Matt. 25.31–3). To those on his right, he will say:

> Come [...] inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world; for I was hungry and you gave me food, I was thirsty and you gave me something to drink, I was a stranger and you welcomed me. (Matt. 25.34–5)

But to those who, in rejecting others, rejected Christ, he will say: 'You that are accursed, depart from me into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels' (Matt. 25.41).

The second exemplary text for the final judgement was the last book in the New Testament, the book of Revelation. In the nineteenth chapter, John described the war between Christ (the rider on the white horse) and the armies of heaven against the beast (the Antichrist) and the kings of the earth with their armies. The armies of the wicked would be destroyed, and the beast, along with the false prophet, would be thrown into 'that lake of fire that burns with sulfur' (19.20). All the rest would be slaughtered by the rider on the white horse with his sword, and the birds would eat their flesh. Satan would be bound and confined to the pit for a thousand years. The souls of the just who had been beheaded for their testimony for Jesus would then be brought back to life and reign 'with Christ a thousand years' (20.4). The rest of the dead would not come to life until the thousand years were ended.

At the end of this millennium, Satan would be released from his prison and join with the nations of Gog and Magog to make war against the saints. Fire from heaven would consume them, and the Devil would be thrown into the lake of fire and sulphur to join the beast and the false prophet in eternal torments. The final resurrection and the Last Judgement would then follow:

> Then I saw a great white throne and the one who sat on it; the earth and the heaven fled from his presence, and no place was found for them. And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and the books were opened. Also another book was opened, the book of life. And the dead were judged according to their works, as recorded in the books. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it. Death and Hades gave up

> the dead that were in them, and all were judged according to what they had done […] anyone whose name was not found written in the book of life was thrown into the lake of fire. (Rev. 20.11–15)

Christianity was established within just this kind of apocalyptic Jewish milieu. At the top of almost everyone's expectations was the resurrection of the dead. Among Jesus's contemporaries, only the Sadducees rejected it. They inaugurated a sceptical tradition of attempts to reduce it to nonsense. Thus, the Gospels depict them trying unsuccessfully to trap a Jesus who believed in the resurrection of the dead into an admission of its absurdity.[32]

The centrality within early Christianity of the resurrection of the dead on the Last Day was reinforced not only by its origin in such an apocalyptic milieu, but also by the belief that Jesus himself had risen from the dead. His resurrection foreshadowed and thus guaranteed the future resurrection of all the dead. Thus, to sceptical Corinthian Christians who were doubting the future resurrection of the dead, Paul declared:

> But in fact Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who have died. For since death came through a human being, the resurrection of the dead has also come through a human being; for as all die in Adam, so all will be made alive in Christ. (1 Cor. 15.20–2)

Still, just as there was uncertainty within some Christian communities over whether Christ had really risen from the dead, there was also uncertainty about the nature of his risen body among those who believed in his resurrection. The Gospel accounts of the risen Christ reflect this. On the one hand, they stress the physical nature of the risen Jesus: the tomb was empty; Jesus ate broiled fish in the disciples' presence; he breathed on them; he invited them to touch him to see that he was not a ghost but had flesh and bones; and the women at the empty tomb held on to his feet. On the other hand, the Gospel accounts hint at the spiritual nature of the risen Christ: he appeared suddenly among the disciples; he was able to pass through locked doors; he was sometimes not recognisable to his disciples; and he instructed Mary Magdalene not to touch him (see Plate 16 [c]). In general, they vary in their depiction between a 'heavenly' Jesus who materialises on earth (primarily in Matthew) and an 'earthly' Jesus who has as yet to ascend to heaven (primarily in Luke and John).[33] It is an ambiguity

about the nature of the body of the resurrected Jesus that flowed directly into uncertainty about the nature of resurrected bodies on the Last Day.

Thus, the New Testament generally had an expectation that the dead would rise on the Last Day. But it was remarkably silent about the nature of the bodies that would then be resurrected. The most elaborate exception to this was Paul's First Letter to the Corinthians, in which he responded specifically to the questions, 'How are the dead raised? With what kind of body do they come?' (1 Cor. 15.35). His answer was quite unequivocal: 'flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable' (15.50). Thus, there was no resurrection of the flesh in Paul. What was sown as a physical or natural body (σῶμα ψυχικόν) would be raised a spiritual body (σῶμα πνευματικόν): 'we will all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed' (15.52; see Plate 18 [C]). There is no doctrine of the immortality of the soul in Paul, nor anywhere else in the New Testament for that matter. But crucially, and perhaps a little surprisingly, there is also no doctrine of the resurrection of the physical body (that is, the same one that was buried). Rather, as the metaphor of 'the sowing of seed' suggests, there was both a continuity (for it is we who are raised) and a radical difference (for we are changed).[34] This will be the case whether we are alive or dead when the last trumpet sounds.

While the New Testament was either silent about the nature of our resurrected bodies, or opted for a non-physical version like Paul, the established view from the second century CE onwards was in favour of the resurrection of the physical body (although perhaps 'qualitatively' different). This was formally endorsed by the fourth Lateran Council of the Western Church in its first canon in 1215:

> But He descended [to hell] in soul, arose in flesh, and ascended equally in both; He will come at the end of the world to judge the living and the dead and will render to the reprobate and to the elect according to their works. Who all shall rise with their own bodies *which they now have* that they may receive according to their merits, whether good or bad, the latter eternal punishment with the devil, the former eternal glory with Christ.[35]

Skeletal remains would be 'refleshed' (see Plate 17 [BW]). To all intents and purposes, this was the view endorsed in the sixteenth-century Reformation in the Lutheran, Calvinist and Anglican traditions.[36]

Why was it that early Christianity so overwhelmingly opted for the resurrection of the physical body in spite of Paul's clear preference for a spiritual body and in the face of doubts about a physical resurrection within the Christian community? In part, it referenced the apparently physical resurrection of Christ; in part, it referred to the necessity of a restoration through Christ of that which had been lost through Adam, that is, the immortality of the physical body; in part too, it wanted to assert the virtue of embodiment against those who viewed the flesh as evil. But it was particularly a reaction to a shift within Christian anthropology from understanding man as a psycho-physical unity to understanding him as a dual being comprised of body and soul. A *spiritual* body was too easily assimilated to a physicalised soul. Thus, with the absorption of the Platonic doctrine of the immortality of the immaterial soul into the Christian tradition, it was necessary for Christianity to define itself against the Platonic tradition not by the resurrection of a *spiritual* body, but by the resurrection of the *physical* body, and one moreover that was in material continuity with the one that had died. All of which brings us back to where we began this chapter, namely, with the assertion of Athenagoras in *De resurrectione mortuorum* that 'along with the interminable duration of the soul, there will be a perpetual continuance of the body according to its proper nature'.[37]

For Athenagoras, arguments for the resurrection of the body turned on four main considerations. The first of these was God's ability to raise the dead and depended on the evidence of his power already apparent in creation. Who could believe, he wrote, that out of a drop of semen there could arise 'bones, and nerves, and cartilages […] muscles too, and flesh, and intestines, and the other parts of the body'?[38] That same power will be evident in the resurrection of the flesh, even

> to separate that which has been broken up and distributed among a multitude of animals of all kinds which are wont to have recourse to such bodies, and glut their appetite upon them […] and unite it again with the proper members and parts of members, whether it has passed into some one of those animals, or into many, or thence into others.[39]

The second and third arguments concerned the requirements of justice. Since justice is not found in this life, there needs to be a resurrection of the dead to apportion justice on the other side of the grave. Moreover, since God must judge the entire human being, it is necessary that body and soul

both survive in order that the being who practised either righteousness or lawlessness be appropriately rewarded or punished.[40] Finally, and fourth, justice requires that the same person be punished or rewarded as is vicious or virtuous. This is only possible by the resurrection of the same bodies being 'restored to the same souls'.[41]

That it is the resurrection of the physical body that distinguishes Christians was the key argument in Tertullian's *De resurrectione carnis* (On the resurrection of the flesh), a work written against those who denied the materiality of the resurrection body. Thus, he began this work: 'The resurrection of the dead is the Christian's trust. By it we are believers.'[42] As for Athenagoras, so also for Tertullian, the resurrection of the flesh arose as a consequence of the nature of man as both body and soul. It was also a requirement of justice that there be recompense on the other side of the grave for the righteous and the wicked, and that the whole person, body and soul – both active agents in virtue and vice – receive appropriate rewards and punishments. God would be unjust were he 'to exclude from reward the flesh which is associated in good works' and idle were he to 'exempt it from punishment, when it has been an accomplice in evil deeds'.[43]

All this is not to suggest that, for Tertullian, rewards and punishments occurred only after the final judgement. Body–soul dualism enabled Christianity both to have immediate post-mortem pains and pleasures inflicted upon the soul, and to have the same inflicted on the reunited body and soul on the Last Day. But Tertullian was perhaps the first to apply 'physical' rewards and punishments to the soul immediately after death and the same to the body reunited with its soul at the time of the Last Judgement. People are apt to suppose, he wrote, that the flesh will have to be present at the final judgement because otherwise the soul, being incorporeal, would be incapable of suffering pain or pleasure. On the contrary, he argued, as the case of the rich man and Lazarus demonstrated, souls are even now capable of torment and blessing even though disembodied. This is because the soul 'is corporeal, possessing a peculiar kind of solidity in its nature, such as enables it to perceive and suffer'.[44]

Tertullian recognised that, granting the soul was 'embodied' and therefore capable of pains and pleasures, critics would respond by declaring the final resurrection of the flesh unnecessary. Tertullian saw them coming. This 'physicalised' soul was capable only of receiving punishment for those misdeeds that it committed that did not require the flesh – sins of thought rather than deed. For sins of deed, the flesh was required. Thus, for punishment of

these sins, the resurrection of the flesh was necessary. The soul, therefore, waits in Hades 'for the flesh, in order that it may through the flesh also compensate for its deeds, inasmuch as it laid upon the flesh the execution of its own thoughts'.[45] Still, if this was resurrection of the same body, it was with some qualifications. However mutilated our body in life, declared Tertullian, we will be restored to the integrity of our natural condition. Not all of our resurrected parts will, however, be needed for their original functions. There will be no more eating or drinking, no more sex, and no more child-bearing or breastfeeding. Although there will be no marriage in heaven, couples will be reunited.

Flesh and bones

With his emphasis on the resurrection of the physical body, Tertullian can do little with Paul's account of the spiritual body in his First Letter to the Corinthians except to read it against the grain (or in this case the seed).[46] But for a Platonised Christian like Augustine, the Pauline underplaying of the physical body was congenial. Thus, the early Augustine endorsed Paul's image of the resurrection body as a spiritual one. He did so by means of a distinction between the resurrection of the body (*corpus*) and the resurrection of the flesh (*caro*). The resurrection of the body did not entail the resurrection of the flesh because, while all flesh is also body, not all body is also flesh. Thus, in 393 CE, in his *De fide et symbolo* (On faith and the creed), Augustine declared that the resurrection body 'will no more be flesh and blood, but only body' (*non iam caro erit et sanguis, sed tantum corpus*). The spiritual body will be set free from time to enjoy 'eternal life in ineffable love and steadfastness without corruption'.[47]

However, by the time that he had completed *De civitate dei* (The city of God) in 426 CE, Augustine had moved away from his Platonic inclinations. The resurrection body has now become a much more 'fleshly' one. So the saints at the resurrection of the dead will 'inhabit *those very bodies* in which they have here toiled', but without the corruptions, griefs and troubles that are attached to the flesh on this side of the grave.[48] Thus the resurrected bodies will not only then be better than they are now in their best state of health, 'but will surpass the bodies of our first parents ere they sinned'.[49] So, unlike those of Adam and Eve, although they could do so, resurrected bodies will have no need to eat or drink, either to preserve them from

disease or decay or to appease hunger and thirst. Then, we will have bodies that appear to be about 30 years of age, the age which Christ reached, of a height that we had or would have had at that time. Men shall rise in male bodies, women in female bodies. From those bodies, sexual desire will be withdrawn. Although the female members will remain, they will be 'adapted not to the old uses, but to a new beauty, which, so far from provoking lust, now extinct, shall excite praise to the wisdom and clemency of God'.[50] There will be, however, no marriages in heaven. Our thoughts will be visible to all, as others' thoughts will be to us. Then the flesh will serve the spirit (a spiritual body) and not the spirit the flesh (a carnal spirit) as is now the case. So they will be spiritual bodies, 'not because they shall cease to be bodies, but because they shall subsist by a quickening spirit'.[51] In this way, they replicate the risen body of Christ.

Augustine struggled with one of the key questions about the afterlife. If we are granted the vision of God, with what eyes do we see him? At one time he believed that God could not be seen through the bodily eye since that would suggest that God occupied a space at a distance from us and that he was corporeal and visible rather than present everywhere, incorporeal and invisible. Rather, he suggested, he will be seen through the eyes of the mind: 'The vision of God belongs to the inner man.'[52] On the other hand, later in his life, in *De civitate dei*, he suggested that, just as we can see now whether bodies are alive or dead just by looking at them, so the risen saints will be able to see God with their bodily eyes as he is in himself, in the bodies of those around them, in the new heavens and the new earth, and in everything that will then exist. But they will also see him when their eyes are shut, 'since they shall always see him with the spirit'.[53]

With Augustine's *De civitate dei*, the acceptance of body–soul dualism had enabled mid-fifth-century Christianity to clarify the nature of both life immediately after death and life after the resurrection. The notion of the immortal soul provided the philosophical underpinning for life immediately after death, and resurrected bodies reunited with their souls for eternal life after the end of history. In sum, therefore, the person consisted of an incorporeal soul, in existence since the time of its conception and immortal into the future and a mortal, physical body.[54] At death, the soul left the body and received rewards in Paradise or Abraham's Bosom (separate from or an upper part of Hades) or received punishments in Hades. The body decayed and corrupted in the grave. At the time of the resurrection, the power of God reconstituted the individual physical body from its remains

(albeit transformed) and reunited it with its soul. The person would then be judged for an eternity of successive moments of punishments in hell, or an eternity of rewards in heaven that partook of both time and eternity. The greatest good of this would be the vision of God, physically and spiritually, in the inner spiritual and outer physical man.

However that may be, body–soul dualism not only clarified but also confused eschatology. It was difficult to speak cogently of the afterlife experience of the incorporeal soul without giving it physical characteristics. Thus, the soul was 'physicalised'. While it was not difficult to speak of a resurrected fleshly body being punished eternally in hell, it was not easy to speak cogently of a resurrected fleshly body in heaven without giving it the kind of 'idealised form' it merited as a reward and the sort of 'spiritual' attributes that made it possible to enjoy the vision of God. Thus, the body, in spite of its 'skin and bones', was spiritualised. In short, the clear distinction between body and soul was unable to bear the weight that the demands of eschatology put upon it. Moreover, as Augustine demonstrated, it was never easy for the Platonised Christian theologian to give the conceptual weight to the body that the Christian tradition required, and by which it distinguished itself from those contemporary philosophical traditions that valued the spiritual and strongly disparaged physical embodiment. In Augustine's case, a Platonised Christianity was messily interwoven with a Christianised Platonism.

Nevertheless, a Christianised Platonism continued to thrive as the theological underpinning of the Christian mystical tradition. It was a mysticism that looked back especially to the Neoplatonism of Plotinus (204–70 CE), which was transmitted to later generations through the writings of Origen, Augustine and the sixth-century mystical theologian Dionysius the Areopagite.[55] A spiritualised reading of the resurrection on the Last Day was to remain dominant within Eastern Orthodox Christianity.[56] This was a Platonist tradition that, in spite of the theological weight of the body, had an almost visceral distaste for it as an impediment to the experience of the divine. The vision of God that was pursued was of the soul and not of the body, of contemplation over action, of the cultivation of the spirit and the mortification of the flesh. Thus, the attainment of that 'spiritual vision' – the unity-in-difference between God and the soul now as a foretaste of that eternal unity after death – did not require embodiment either now or then. Certainly it had little interest in the reuniting of the body and soul for final judgement.

That a Platonised Christianity found it difficult to give the body its theological due was the result of the tendency within Platonism to think of the body as merely a container of the soul. This suggested that it was the soul that was the real person and that the body was dispensable. The matter was otherwise with Aristotelianism. Aristotle (384–322 BCE) had understood the soul to be the form of the body and the body to be the matter of the soul. Put simply, this meant that the soul was that which made inanimate things into living things. In turn, this meant that, as a living being, the real person consisted of both body and soul.

This Aristotelian understanding of personal identity was incorporated by Thomas Aquinas into his account of the nature of the person. For Aquinas, the soul could continue to exist without the body, although the body (without its animating principle – the soul) did not. Thus, Aquinas was able to give an account of life immediately after death in terms of the incorporeal, immaterial soul. The soul was therefore able to 'see' God immediately after death: '[A]s soon as the soul of the just man is separated from the body, it sees God.'[57] Having said which, we (and the Platonist) are left to wonder what the resurrected body could add to our post-mortem happiness granted we have immediate access to the Beatific Vision after death. But crucially, because on Aristotelian grounds personal identity consisted of both form (soul) and matter (body), the eternal life of the individual did nonetheless require the eventual reunion of body and soul. In order for us to enjoy eternal life, we needed both body and soul. Thus, Aquinas's Aristotelianised Christianity was better able to give the body its theological entitlement, even though (on his own terms) eternal happiness was not increased as a consequence.

Undoubtedly, an Aristotelianised Christianity did better suit the Christian view on the essential goodness of creation and matter. It also better framed the Christian view on personal identity. Consequently, it provided what a Platonised Christianity was unable to – a more coherent account of the necessity for the resurrection of the flesh on the Last Day. It also provided a better philosophical foundation for the apportioning of rewards and punishments to both souls and bodies. Thus, for example, Aquinas's distinction between *poena damni* (pain of loss) and *poena sensus* (pain of sense) enabled him to elaborate on the different modes of punishment to be apportioned to the souls and the bodies of the damned.[58] Unbaptised infants, we recall, suffered the psychological punishment of the loss of the Beatific Vision (*poena damni*) but not

physical torments. After the resurrection, the reunited bodies of the damned would suffer both psychological and physical torment – *poena damni* and *sensus*. By contrast, the happiness of the souls of the blessed would not include 'physical' rewards. These were only to come into the mix in the nineteenth century. Rather, the happiness of the saints would consist exclusively of spiritual goods. This happiness would continue after they were reunited with bodies that would then be completely under the sway of their souls.

The punishment inflicted on the souls of the damned before the resurrection would also consist of spiritual evils. But surprisingly, Aquinas accorded to the soul a quasi-corporeality that enabled it also to be physically punished immediately after death. This was because the souls of the wicked, having set their affections on material things and having scorned divine and spiritual things, were punished 'not only by being deprived of spiritual goods, but by being subjected to the tyranny of material things'.[59] Thus, the soul separated from its body was in agony, not only because it perceived itself to be in fire (*poena damni*) but also because it actually experienced the fire (*poena sensus*).[60]

Sharks and cannibals

The more the emphasis upon the necessity of the body for eternity, the more necessary it was to defend the intellectual coherence of this idea. Thus, Thomas Aquinas also inherited from early Christianity a set of questions about the conceptual feasibility of the notion of the resurrection of the flesh. Athenagoras, for example, had agonised over the eventual fate of those eaten by fish whose bodies could not as a consequence be separated from the bodies of the fish that had consumed them; or, worse, those who had been eaten by fish that themselves were later eaten by men; or, worse still, those whose bodies could not be separated from those of the cannibals that had eaten them.[61] To get around this, Athenagoras came up with a genuinely original (if incredible) answer. This was to the effect that God had so created living beings that fish or human beings could not absorb 'non-natural' food (like human beings). Jonah, after all, was not digested in the whale. So non-natural food was either vomited or excreted. Thus, even if eaten, no skerrick of us was absorbed into that by which we were eaten. As a result, our bodily identity was assured on the Day of Resurrection. Moreover, at

that time, and however widely dispersed the parts of our bodies might be, God could reassemble that which he once made.

Athenagoras was giving serious answers (or at least attempting to do so) to questions from 'cultured' critics of the resurrection that were only half-serious, if serious at all. Tertullian similarly took the questions seriously, although he knew that 'the mickey' was being taken. Heretics, he wrote,

> single out what parts of our bodies may suit them, handle them without delicacy, and […] pour torrents of scorn upon the natural functions of our members, for the purpose of upsetting the resurrection, and making us blush over their cavils.[62]

Augustine too dealt seriously with a set of questions that he also believed were intended 'to cast ridicule on our faith':[63] whether aborted foetuses will rise; the sizes of resurrected foetuses and children; the bodies of resurrected monstrous births, the disfigured and the deformed; the fate of those devoured by beasts, consumed by fire, drowned or eaten by cannibals; and the gender of the resurrected. The short answer to all of these questions was, as noted above, that all would rise in the same bodies they had before death, but that they would spend eternity in the form that these bodies had had the potential to be rather than the bodies they had actually been.

By the middle of the twelfth century, these sorts of question about the materiality of the risen body were no longer the stuff of the opponents of Christianity. Rather, they had become a matter of genuine philosophical debate within scholarly circles. More specifically, they had become part of the overall medieval discussion about the resurrection of the dead by virtue of their inclusion in Distinction 44 of the fourth book of the *Sentences* of the bishop of Paris, Peter Lombard (*c.*1100–60). The four books of Lombard's *Sentences* were to become a standard textbook of theology for the remainder of the medieval period. His overall conclusion matched that of Augustine:

> Nor will anything perish of the substance of which the flesh of man is created but the natural substance of the body will be reintegrated by the collection of all the particles that were dispersed before. And the bodies of the saints will rise without any defect, shining like the sun, all deformities that are here being cut off.[64]

By the time of Thomas Aquinas in the thirteenth century, the discussion of these questions had become more and more elaborate and (for the modern reader) more and more obscure. Aquinas's discussion of cannibalism exemplifies this. By then it had generally been agreed, against Athenagoras, that what had been consumed was incorporated into the substance of the consumer. In the case of the flesh of one man absorbed by a cannibal into his own flesh, Aquinas concluded that the absorbed flesh would rise in him who had it first, the missing matter to be made up from other food consumed by the cannibal – or God would make up the difference. But, Aquinas wondered, if the cannibal had eaten *only* human flesh, then *all* the flesh that he produced would have a claim on it by those whom he had eaten. Thus, after all his victims had been given their 'share', there would be nothing of the cannibal to resurrect. In this case, wrote Aquinas, the embryonic material produced by his parents would have been retained by him. This would be sufficient for God to restore his body. But what if, Aquinas went on, his parents had only eaten human flesh? In this case, even his embryonic flesh derived from eating human flesh. Again, on the principle of original ownership, all the cannibal's flesh belonged to others and there was nothing of him left to be resurrected. However, in this situation, Aquinas concluded, the flesh will rise in him 'to whose perfection it belonged more intimately, and the cannibal himself would arise'.[65] The principle of original ownership was here overridden by the principle of greater importance or need: 'Accordingly, if something was in one man as the radical seed from which he was generated, and in another as the superfluity of nourishment, it will rise in him who was generated therefrom as from seed.'[66] Whatever the case, the miraculous activity of God would be central.

As to the nature of resurrected bodies, Aquinas's last work, the *Compendium theologiae*, summed up the state of play around the middle of the thirteenth century. On the Day of Resurrection, the soul will reunite with 'a human body made up of flesh and bones, and equipped with the same organs it now possesses'.[67] So bodies will be gendered. Nevertheless, having obtained immortality, the means that served to keep the body alive will no longer be needed. So there will be no need of food or drink, nor of clothing. There will also not be any use for the reproductive organs, nor (because surplus food produces semen) any possibility of reproduction. Still, the organs for these activities will be present: 'all the members of the body will have their place in the risen [body], for the preservation of nature *in its entirety* rather than for the exercise of their normal functions.'[68] All natural

defects will be corrected and God will supply what is missing. Crucially, there will be a complete subjection of body to soul. So desire to eat, drink or have sex will be absent. Because of the influence emanating from the soul, the body will be subtle and spiritual. It will possess 'the radiant beauty of clarity'.[69] In addition, it will be unable to suffer and will be endowed with agility. With this kind of body, with no need for food, clothing, transportation or medicine, there will be no need for heavenly plants or (pet lovers read no further!) animals. The happiness of the blessed will consist solely of spiritual pleasures, notably the unobstructed vision of God.

The damned, like the blessed, will be complete in their kind, but having qualities opposite to the blessed. They remain gross and not subtle, and thus capable of suffering. Indeed, these defects will be heightened in them. They will not be agile but sluggish. They will not be radiant. Rather, they 'will be ugly in their swarthiness, so that the blackness of the soul may be mirrored in the body, as is intimated in Isaiah 13.8: "Their countenances shall be as faces burnt."'[70] Even though their bodies will be punished with flames, they will not be subject to corruption. The condemned person's soul, so far as it is the form and nature of such a body, will confer never-ending existence on the latter. But because of its imperfection, the soul will not be able to bestow on the body immunity from suffering. Consequently the bodies of the damned will suffer forever, but will not undergo dissolution.

These questions about the nature of the resurrection body were still live ones in the seventeenth century. The new empirical sciences provided fresh answers to old questions. Robert Boyle (1627–91), the father of modern chemistry, was convinced that the resurrection of bodies would happen, not in the course of nature but by the power of God. Nevertheless, in his 1675 work *Some Physico-theological Considerations about the Possibility of the Resurrection*, Boyle attempted to illuminate the biblical understanding of the resurrection by examples drawn from the natural world. It was not only the dispersal of the remains of the dead, but the corruption and change in bodily parts that Boyle saw as a genuine impediment to their reunion into the same body that once was alive. And the problem was made more complicated were parts of a person consumed by wild beasts or fish or, even worse, cannibals.

Boyle (like Aquinas but unlike Athenagoras) accepted that such bodily parts became a substantial part of the body that consumed them. Even then, he suggested, they may be retrievable by an intelligent, omnipotent God. That said (again, unlike Athenagoras), Boyle was not committed to

an account of personal identity that involved a numerical identity of parts. Even in this life, he explained, the body is in a state of perpetual flux. Apart from skull and bones, 'in no very great compass of time, a great part of the human body must be changed.'[71] So the complete retrieval of all parts was unnecessary. Personal identity was retained if only a portion of the matter of the former body constituted the resurrection body. This, he believed, aligned with the biblical understanding of personal identity. Drawing on Ezekiel's vision of the resurrection of the valley of bones (Ezek. 37.1–14 – 'Dem bones, dem bones, dem dry bones') and his own chemical experiments on the stable and long-lasting texture of bones, he surmised that skeletal remains would ensure the identity of the post- and pre-resurrection bodies, God adding such other parts as he saw fit to restore the bodies.

The most substantial late seventeenth-century defence of the doctrine that post- and pre-resurrection bodies would be exactly identical in parts was that of the English scholar Humphrey Hody (1659–1707), chaplain to John Tillotson, the archbishop of Canterbury. Most of Hody's ingenuity was reserved for defending his account of the resurrection body by appeal to scientific and empirical evidence. To this end, he invoked the *De statica medicina* (On medical measurement) of Sanctorius of Padua, or Santorio Santorio (1561–1636), the founder of the modern study of metabolism. Sanctorius had constructed a large weighing chair upon which for some 30 years he periodically ate, worked and slept, weighing himself, everything he ate and drank, and everything he excreted. Hody had noticed his conclusion that the weight of his waste products was only a little less than what he had eaten and drunk. Thus, wrote Hody, should one man devour another,

> it appears from Sanctorius's Observation that not above the 50th part of the Flesh of the Person Devour'd would become the Flesh of him that ate it. And besides the other 49 parts of the Flesh, there would remain all the Bones untouched, which make up a great (the most substantial) part of the Body.[72]

It was necessary only that the most important parts be raised – bones, skin, nerves, tendons, ligaments, substance of vessels. Recognising that even one-fiftieth not being raised was sufficient to open his account to criticism, he added an unusual proviso: if God has decreed that *all* the parts should be raised up, he suggested, 'God will take care that no one shall die whilst his Body contains any Particles that belong to another.'[73]

He also dealt with the objection that, on the Last Day, there would not be sufficient matter on the whole surface of the earth to make up the necessary number of bodies for all those who would have lived and died by that time. A complicated set of arithmetical calculations was offered to avoid this dilemma. Thus, for example, on the ratio of the estimated square feet in England to an estimated number of persons in 10,000 years, he declared that the latter was only one-seventeenth of the former. And taking into account the ratio of the weight of men (with appropriate adjustments for women and children) to the weight of a solid cubic foot of common earth, he concluded:

> it will plainly appear that the weight of a Humane Body, taking one with another, is not so great as the weight of a Solid Foot of common Earth. It is manifest therefore, that in less than the Seventeenth Part of England, if you go but One Foot deep, there is as much Substance, as would make up all the Humane Bodies that ever were, are, and will be, tho' the World should last in all 10,000 years.[74]

For Hody, gravity posed a problem. Because resurrected bodies would have physical weight, they would be unable to be sustained in ethereal heavens. On the one hand, he suggested, their physical weight would not be a problem in such regions since there was no such thing as gravity in regions purely ethereal above the reach and activity of particular orbs. The more 'natural' solution was the one Hody preferred: 'Perhaps after all, our *Heaven* will be nothing but a *Heaven upon Earth*, or some glorious solid *Orb* created on purpose for us in those immense Regions which we call Heaven.'[75] Still, perhaps, this was not problematic after all. In accordance with the tradition, Hody believed that resurrection bodies would be incorruptible, powerful, spiritual, celestial, glorious, without wrinkle or blemish, beautiful and comely – just like Adam's, although not requiring food and drink. They would be physically perfect. So again, Hody's bodies may be 'earthy', but they are highly 'idealised', and far from recognisable in most cases as the ones we will possess at the time of our deaths. In short, for Hody as for many others, all the problems around the nature of resurrected 'earthly' bodies were 'spiritualised' away.

On the issue of the resurrection of the physical body, much theological ink had been spilt in the attempt rationally to defend the philosophically unintelligible. And in the end, if a 'spiritualised' resurrection body was not to

be endorsed, the only recourse – from Tertullian to Aquinas to Hody – was to the miraculous. It is perhaps no surprise that as the feasibility of the miraculous disappeared in the eighteenth century, so rational defences of the resurrection of the physical body disappeared from intellectual history, relegated to a forgotten and unmarked theological grave.

Apocalypse soon

As we have noted above, resurrected bodies were one part of a larger apocalyptic story that related to the return of Christ to judge the living and the dead, some to receive eternal happiness and the remainder eternal punishment. The absence of any great concerns in the New Testament about life after death and before the Last Judgement was the consequence of early Christian expectations that the return of Christ and the Last Judgement were imminent: 'The end of all things is near; therefore be serious and discipline yourselves for the sake of your prayers' (1 Pet. 4.7). Yet even within the New Testament, we can detect signs that early Christians were worrying that the end times had not yet arrived. More particularly, they were concerned about the fate of those who would die before Christ returned. Thus, Paul had to write to assure Thessalonian Christians that those who had already died would be saved first:

> For this we declare to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive, who are left until the coming of the Lord, will by no means precede those who have died. For the Lord himself, with a cry of command, with the archangel's call and with the sound of God's trumpet, will descend from heaven, and the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive, who are left, will be caught up in the clouds together with them to meet the Lord in the air; and so we will be with the Lord forever. (1 Thess. 4.15–17)

Emphasis on the resurrection of the dead rather than the life immediately after death, or vice versa, was a consequence of different emphases upon the body and the soul within the dualism that Christianity inherited from Greek philosophy. But it was also the result of imminent expectations or otherwise about the end of history and the return of Christ in judgement. Such imminent expectations have waxed and waned from New Testament times to the present.[76] As they waxed, the destiny of the individual after

the Apocalypse took precedence over destiny immediately after death. As they waned, the life of the soul immediately after death became dominant.

These expectations that the world was about to end arose among the poor, the dispossessed and the marginalised, looking forward in the next world to a reversal of their misfortunes in this one, and sooner rather than later.[77] But they were also present among the educated elite. More generally, they were part of the historical story within which Christian life was lived, a story that began with the creation of all things and proceeded through the Fall of Man and his redemption in Jesus Christ to a cataclysmic end. More particularly, expectations of the imminence of the end occurred both inside the ecclesiastical establishment and outside of it. Whether within or without the Church, these were expectations that arose among those who saw the return of Christ in the near future as an incentive to the reform of a corrupt Church in the present. They also flourished among those who, identifying the Church with Satan or the Antichrist, had given up any expectations of reform and looked forward in hope and fear to the salvation of the few and the destruction of the many.

The story of life after death in the West is that of a complicated, often messy, tension between post-mortem and post-apocalyptic life, between time and eternity, between incorporeal physicalised souls and corporeal spiritualised bodies. For its part, mainstream Christianity, whether in the Greek East or the Latin West, attempted to manage the tension between the two. This was a virtually impossible ask. On the one hand, as we have seen, the demands of eschatology required the distinction. On the other hand, as we will see, the requirements of anthropology enhanced the one to the exclusion of the other. And each, as we have seen, was liable to collapse into the other.

Chapter Four

Purgatory and Beyond

> Since the passion and death of the Lord Jesus Christ, these souls have seen and see the divine essence with an intuitive vision and even face to face, without the mediation of any creature by way of object of vision; rather the divine essence immediately manifests itself to them, plainly, clearly and openly, and in this vision they enjoy the divine essence. Moreover, by this vision and enjoyment the souls of those who have already died are truly blessed and have eternal life and rest. Also the souls of those who will die in the future will see the same divine essence and will enjoy it before the general judgment.
>
> Pope Benedict XII, *Benedictus Deus* (1336)

'Blessed be God'

On 29 January 1336, Benedict XII (pope from 1334–42) issued the papal bull *Benedictus Deus* (Blessed be God). To all intents and purposes, it ended the controversy that had raged in the 1330s over the Beatific Vision. This was a debate that engaged three popes, the king of France, the Holy Roman Emperor and any number of theologians. It was centred on the nature of the afterlife between death and the Last Judgement, specifically on whether the soul could fully enjoy the spiritual goods of eternity, namely the Beatific Vision, prior to its reunion with the body on the Last Day.[1]

The controversy had crystallised on All Saints' Day in 1331 when John XXII (pope from 1316–34), Benedict's predecessor, preached a sermon suggesting that the souls of the saints now contemplating Christ's humanity would, upon reunion with their bodies at the general resurrection, attain the full and final vision of God. As Paul would have put it, until they were reunited with the body, souls saw God only as if through a glass darkly. In the previous decade, John XXII had already suggested that the resurrected body was necessary to the complete Beatific Vision, since it was promised

to the complete person – body and soul – and not just to the soul. In short, embodiment was necessary to the full joys of heaven. His view scandalised many and he received no support from any theologian of note. The universities of Paris and Oxford were against it. It caused such a stir that, by the summer of 1334, his papal position was in jeopardy.

It is probable that only his death saved him from having to face a General Council called to consider sacking him. On his deathbed, John XXII at least gave to the gathered cardinals the appearance of having slightly revised his opinion in the light of the controversy he had aroused: 'the holy souls see God and the divine essence face to face and as clearly as their condition as souls separated from their bodies allowed.'[2] This still left open the possibility that, after reunion with the body, the Beatific Vision of the soul might be even more intense. He might have received some comfort after his death from the knowledge that the Eastern Church supported his position, although we can only hope that he would have known personally by then whether he was right or wrong.

In response to the controversy, Pope Benedict XII left John XXII's final statement unanswered. But he did determine that all worthy souls (in some cases, after purification) would see God 'plainly, clearly and openly, and in this vision they enjoy the divine essence.'[3] Moreover, because such souls were truly blessed and had eternal life and rest, the virtues of faith and hope (being no longer necessary) would cease. After such intuitive and face-to-face vision and enjoyment have begun for these souls, the same vision and enjoyment 'will continue without any interruption and without end until the last Judgment and from then on forever'.[4] Those who were not found worthy of the vision of God would go to hell immediately after death. Nevertheless, on the Day of Judgement, they too would appear in their bodies before the judgement seat of Christ to give an account of their personal deeds.

On the face of it, this was a triumph of Platonism over Aristotelianism, of soul only rather than soul-plus-body as the criterion of human identity. For it did suggest that, to enjoy the Beatific Vision 'plainly, clearly and openly' (*nude, clare et aperte*), only the soul was essential in the afterlife. But there is one qualification that needs to be made. This is to the effect that soul was not *just* soul. That is to say, as we have noted earlier, the soul was highly physicalised and had quasi-physical experiences, not least because it was impossible to say anything about the soul without giving it body-like features. As Caroline Bynum concludes:

> It thus seems probable that the position of *Benedictus Deus* gained ground steadily in the thirteenth century and prevailed in the fourteenth, at least in part because theologians, poets, and visionaries imagined the soul that achieved beatitude as if it already in some way possessed, or expressed itself in, its body.[5]

If this was a triumph of Platonic anthropology over Aristotelian, it was also a triumph of one form of eschatology over another. For if the delights of the vision of God were available before the Last Judgement, there was no need for the soul to be reunited with its body on the Last Day, and thus no need for the resurrection of the body. Put simply, even if the resurrection of the flesh and the final judgement that followed remained on the theological books, they added no eschatological value. What mattered for our salvation was the destiny of the soul after death rather than its fate after its reunion with its body.

The *Benedictus Deus* of Benedict XII also left a number of other theological ideas high and dry, or, put more positively, solved the confusions and uncertainties around them that we noted in Chapter 1. If it were the case that souls enjoyed the complete joys of heaven or correspondingly suffered the full horrors of hell before the Last Judgement, then the earlier intermediate stages between death and the Last Judgement, like 'Abraham's Bosom' or 'Paradise' or 'Hades', lost their specific roles. They were now absorbed into heaven or hell, both of which now came into play directly after death rather than after the Last Judgement. From the time of Benedict XII, this was the official doctrine of the Catholic Church. Thus, whether after death or after the Last Judgement, the destination was simply heaven or hell, rather than some preliminary form of these.

There is, however, another doctrine embedded within the *Benedictus Deus* of 1336. This is the modification of heaven or the mitigation of hell known as Purgatory. According to this, souls remaining impure after death were purified before attaining the final vision of God (see Plate 9 [c]). Thus, Benedict XII declared the full vision of God for blessed souls immediately after death or, if not then, at least after a period of purging or purification. Aquinas provided a useful definition of this process:

> Although some souls may be admitted to eternal beatitude as soon as they are released from their bodies, others may be held back from this happiness for a time. For it sometimes happens that during their lives

> people have not done full penance for the sins they have committed, but for which they have been sorry in the end. Since the order of divine justice demands that punishment be undergone for sins, we must hold that souls pay after this life the penalty they have not paid while on earth. This does not mean that they are banished to the ultimate misery of the damned, since by their repentance they have been brought back to the state of charity, whereby they cleave to God as their last end, so that they have merited eternal life. Hence we conclude that there are certain purgatorial punishments [*purgatorias poenas*] after this life, by which the debt of penalty not previously paid is discharged.[6]

This meant that a soul could be deemed ready for the Beatific Vision at some time before, even well before, the Last Judgement. There seemed no good reason – theological, pastoral or devotional – to deny the purified soul its due reward at the time of its having been purged of the sin that remained at the time of its death. We can say that the doctrine of Purgatory, together with the possibility of souls sufficiently pure to merit the Beatific Vision on this side of the Day of Judgement, significantly drove the increasing emphasis on human destiny between death and the end of history and correspondingly decreased the importance of the Last Judgement.

Particular judgements

One important implication of the increasing emphasis on the destiny of the soul between death and the Last Judgement was that God made the decision on the individual's ultimate fate *at the time of his death*. Thus, the *general* judgement of all the resurrected dead on the Day of Judgement merely confirmed the *particular* judgement made when the soul departed its body. As Aquinas rather elegantly put it:

> Accordingly the soul will remain perpetually in whatever last end it is found to have set for itself at the time of death, desiring that state as the most suitable, whether it is good or evil. This is the meaning of Ecclesiastes 11:3: 'If the tree fall to the south or to the north, in what place soever it shall fall, there shall it be.' After this life, therefore, those who are found good at the instant of death will have their wills forever fixed in good. But those who are found evil at that moment will be forever obstinate in evil.[7]

New Testament support for the particular judgement was found in the key passage that dealt with life immediately after death, namely, the parable of the rich man and Lazarus (Luke 16.19–31). Not only were the rich man and Lazarus allocated to places of torment or comfort respectively, but it is clear that there was no possibility of transfer from the one to the other. Thus, Abraham told the rich man,'[B]etween you and us a great chasm has been fixed, so that those who might want to pass from here to you cannot do so, and no one can cross from there to us' (Luke 16.26).

That said, in spite of the implication in the parable of the rich man and Lazarus that there was a post-mortem particular judgement, it was only in the mid-second century that we find a clear statement of this, in an anonymous sermon known as the Second Epistle of Clement. In this case, the emphasis on judgement at the time of death was not motivated by the prospect of life immediately after death. Rather, it was determined by the imminence of the general judgement:

> But ye know that the day of judgment even now 'cometh as a burning oven,' and some 'of the heavens shall melt,' and all the earth shall be as lead melting on the fire, and then the hidden and open works of men shall appear.[8]

The Second Epistle of Clement was very much a theology of 'seize the day'. Death was the last chance. At the end of the day (or the end of the world, for that matter), repentance was crucial on this side of the grave, since there would be no opportunity for it on the other:

> As long therefore, as we are upon earth, let us practise repentance, for we are as clay in the hand of the artificer […] So let us also, while we are in this world, repent with our whole heart of the evil deeds we have done in the flesh, that we may be saved by the Lord, while we have yet an opportunity of repentance. *For after we have gone out of the world, no further power of confessing or repenting will there belong to us*.[9]

Similarly, Cyprian, bishop of Carthage (*c*.200–58 CE), saw death as a final boundary for salvation, whether for those who persecuted Christians or those Christians who were persecuted. Thus, to the pagan proconsul of Africa, Demetrianus, who had blamed war, famine and pestilence on the impiety of the Christians, Cyprian wrote in 252 CE:

> Provide, therefore, while you may, for your safety and your life [...] Believe and live, and do ye who persecute us in tithe rejoice with us for eternity. When you have once departed there, there is no longer any place for repentance, and no possibility of making satisfaction. *Here* life is either lost or saved; *here* eternal safety is provided for by the worship of God and the fruits of faith.[10]

John Chrysostom, archbishop of Constantinople (*c.*347–407 CE), recognised that, were there the possibility of coming to belief after death, then no one would be damned and all would be saved: 'For all will then repent and adore.'[11] As we will see later, others were to believe that the eventual salvation of all would be no bad thing. For Chrysostom, however, it was a matter of justice. If goodness was not rewarded and evil punished in the next life, then not only was there no incentive to the moral life in this one, but also justice would be made a nonsense of, not least because in this world the righteous suffered and the wicked prospered.

By the year 400, there seems to be a general consensus on the 'particular judgement'. In 419, in his *De natura et origine animae* (On the soul and its origin), in a discussion of the parable of the rich man and Lazarus, Augustine agreed unquestioningly with the view that

> souls after quitting the body are judged, before they come to that final judgement to which they must submit when their bodies are restored to them, and are either tormented or glorified in the very same flesh wherein they once lived here on earth.[12]

It was an interpretation of this parable that he had adopted as early as 399. 'There is no room, you see,' he declared, 'for putting things right when life is over.'[13]

A fiery purging

At the time of writing the *Enchiridion* (Handbook) around 421, Augustine was still committed to the notion that death was the point beyond which *we* could no longer alter our destiny:

> Therefore, it is in this life that all the merit or demerit is acquired, which can either relieve or aggravate a man's sufferings after this life. No one, then, need hope that after he is dead he shall obtain merit with God which he has neglected to secure here.[14]

He also remained in no doubt that the unbaptised were damned, and that the damned were damned forever. Whatever men may conjecture as to the variety of punishments in hell or suggest about the mitigation or intermission of their woes, 'this perpetual death of the wicked, then, that is, their alienation from the life of God, shall abide for ever.'[15] Thus, he firmly rejected any suggestions that all would eventually be saved, even if after a period of punishment. But Augustine *had* nonetheless pondered the words of Paul to the Corinthians:

> The fire shall try every man's work, of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he has built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss; but he himself shall be saved, yet so as by fire. (1 Cor. 3.13–15)

Thus, he did come to believe that there was a distinction between those who, in this life, were willing to lose the worldly things rather than Christ and those who, in times of temptation, put their attachment to worldly things before Christ. The one who put his faith above all else in Christ did suffer pain at the loss of worldly things. But he was not consumed by his loss because, 'protected by his immoveable and incorruptible foundation', he was oriented above all to pleasing God.[16]

So it may perhaps also be, declared Augustine, after death. 'It is a matter that may be inquired into, and either ascertained or left doubtful,' he wrote, 'whether some believers shall pass through a kind of purgatorial fire, and in proportion as they have loved with more or less devotion the goods that perish, be less or more quickly delivered from it.'[17] Thus, for those of faith devoted to good works who had only sinned lightly on this side of death, there may be a period of temporary punishment after death to purify them in preparation for eternal life. Augustine put it slightly differently, albeit to the same effect, in *De civitate dei*. Temporary punishments, he there declared, may be suffered both in this life and the next before the Last Judgement. But those who suffer temporary punishments after death are not doomed to the eternal punishments that will follow that final judgement. To some,

'what is not remitted in this world is remitted in the next, that is, they are not punished with the eternal punishment of the world to come.'[18]

Augustine was not the first to contemplate the possibility of the purification of the soul after death. Clement of Alexandria (*c.*150–*c.*215 CE) had distinguished between those who would be punished eternally and those who would be punished temporarily. Thus there would be two kinds of fire, a consuming fire for the incorrigible and a discerning fire that purifies souls.[19] However, unlike Augustine, it is not clear that this 'purifying' takes place between death and the Last Judgement rather than after it.

The same can be said of Origen. His 'Hades', we recall, was not a place of purification but a place of waiting for the final judgement. Still, what we can say is that, at some time after death, according to Origen, there will eventually be a 'baptism of fire' for all souls, divided into three groups – saints, repentant sinners and unrepentant sinners. The first of these will pass painlessly, the second painfully, through the fire on their way to heaven. The third, the unrepentant, will be sent to the eternal fires of Gehenna.[20] Even for this last group, Origen (at least sometimes) seemed to admit that there was the possibility of salvation for souls. This was a result both of the mercy of God and of the souls' capacity to improve. However, in suggesting that hell might not be eternal, Origen was very much out on his own. As a result, he was transformed from hero to heretic.

Influenced by Origen, Ambrose (*c.*339–97 CE), bishop of Milan, had similar universalist tendencies. He seemed to have held too that souls could be divided into three groups, each of which had to go through a baptism of fire. For the righteous, who were like pure silver, the fire through which they passed was a refreshing one. For the wicked, who were like lead, it was punishment and torture. But for those sinners who were a mix of both silver and lead, the fire was purifying and lasted only as long as it took to melt away the lead.[21] Unlike Origen, however, Ambrose was certain that the purifying of such 'amalgamated' souls began immediately after death and could continue up to and beyond the Last Judgement.[22]

This period of purgation was to become fixed between death and the Last Judgement, and not go beyond it. But the key point had been established. This was the realisation that the division of people into two classes only at the time of death – the saved and the damned – was far too harsh. It was always clear that some (the saints, martyrs and confessors) merited heaven immediately after death. It was also clear that others deserved an eternity in hell. It now became just as clear, however, that there were

among the baptised those who, although they died with unremitted sins, were neither sufficiently evil nor sufficiently incorrigible to merit eternal punishment. All of which suggested that the mercy and justice of God were best served if the class of the not so good but the not *too* bad (which is probably most of us) were both punished for and cleansed of their sins before admission to heaven.

Also embedded within this possibility of the purification of sins was the acceptance that sins differed in the degree of their seriousness. Augustine had distinguished between serious sins that he had called crimes that merited hell, and minor sins. But he had made no connection between slight sins and purgatorial fire. The first to make this connection was Caesarius of Arles (*c.*470–542). Caesarius too distinguished between serious sins (*capitalia peccata* – capital sins) and minor (*minuta*) sins. He warned against the sense of false security among those who believed that their capital crimes (*crimina capitalia*) would be purged by passing through fire (*per ignem transitorium*). It was not capital sins, he pointed out, that would be so purged, but only minor sins. Even then, Caesarius declared, minor sins were not to be ignored in the here and now on the assumption that the purifying fire to come was minimal. That fire of Purgatory, he wrote, 'will be more difficult than any punishment in this world can be seen or imagined or felt'. As for those who failed to repent of serious sins, they would hear the hard and irrevocable sentence, 'Depart from me, accursed ones, into the everlasting fire.'[23] From this time onwards, Paul's words in 1 Corinthians 3.15 on being saved 'but only as through fire' came more and more to be interpreted as the fire that purified in the time between death and the Last Judgement rather than after it.

Caesarius's link between purgatorial fire and minor sins was to be given the authority of the bishop of Rome, Pope Gregory the Great. Augustine had been tentative about the possibility of the purging of sins after death, not least because it acted as a disincentive to the pursuit of the virtuous life on this side of the grave. In the sixth century, however, Pope Gregory gave an emphatic 'Yes' to the question, 'Is there a purgatorial fire after death?' He had no doubt that God made his judgement on human destiny at the time of death. But nonetheless, he declared,

> we must believe that before the day of judgment there is a Purgatory fire for certain small sins […] Yet we have here further to consider, that none can be there purged, no, not for the least sins that be, unless

> in his lifetime he deserved by virtuous works to find such favour in that place.[24]

This distinction between major and minor sins was later to become formalised in terms of the difference between mortal and venial sins (*peccata mortalia et venialia*).[25] Penances for both kinds of sins in this life crossed over the border of death to the other side. All the more reason then to get right with God before death. For William of Auvergne (*c.*1180–1249), for example, the sufferings of Purgatory completed the sufferings of physical and spiritual penance in this life. The soul knows that no atonement in this life can satisfy the demands of divine justice:

> Interior penance is a spiritual judgement in which the sinning soul accuses itself, testifies against itself, judges itself guilty, that is, worthy of infernal torments and tortures for those things it has done wrong. Afterwards, it executes its own sentence upon itself, by torturing itself not only in spiritual ways […] but even with corporeal afflictions such as fasts, works, lashings, and other things of this sort […] And when it sees that all these do not suffice to satisfy the justice of the Creator fully, it applies with prayers and entreaties to the most clement Creator, imploring his mercy so that he might overlook the penalties due him.[26]

For William, no torments, spiritual or physical, that penitents can inflict upon themselves in this life could match the incomparably greater ones that will be inflicted in the hereafter. This provided an incentive, he found, to do all possible penance now in the hope of completing it before death, thus avoiding or at least minimising the pains of purgatorial fire.

Augustine too had recognised the desirability of a proportion between the seriousness of a sin and the time spent in punishment for it. As Jacques Le Goff notes, this was to lead in the later medieval period to the institution of 'a complex system of bookkeeping associated with the world to come'.[27] It was a bookkeeping that arose in keeping with progress in the mathematics of proportionality. Thus for Alexander of Hales (*c.*1170–1245), for example, the proportion between greater and lesser sins and their punishment in this world is the same as that between greater and lesser sins and their punishment in Purgatory. However, the punishments in Purgatory are not proportional to the punishments in this world, for the former are 'disproportionately bitter compared with the punishment endured in this world'.[28]

Again, there is no incentive to postpone repentance now, and no end of incentive to do penance both spiritual and physical in the here and now.

Most souls were realistic enough (or at least sufficiently humble) not to expect heaven immediately after death. Purgatory became, as a consequence, the default destination after death, granting hell could be avoided. The deathbed thus became a scene of high drama as the contrite embraced the last opportunity to avoid hell and ensure Purgatory. For the masses of people who were ill prepared for heaven, Purgatory provided a means by which the process of penitence could continue after death and salvation be gained before all hope ended on the Day of Judgement. And if all else failed, well, you could hopefully rely on those left behind to act on your behalf.

Praying for the dead

The accountancy of the hereafter was rendered significantly more complicated by the development of the notion of suffrages. According to this, prayers offered and good deeds done by those living could be of benefit both to those in Purgatory by mitigating their punishments and to those who performed them on the behalf of those being purified. It was a system that connected the living with the dead and ruptured the boundary between them. The Council of Florence gave 'suffrages' definitive expression in 1439:

> [We define] likewise, that if the truly penitent die in the love of God, before they have made satisfaction by worthy fruits of penance for their sins of commission and omission, their souls are purified by purgatorial fire after death; and that for relief from these pains they are benefited by the suffrages of the faithful in this life, that is, by Masses, prayers, and almsgiving, and by the other offices of piety performed by the faithful for one another according to the practice [*instituta*] of the Church.[29]

In fact, the Council of Florence was once again trying to manage a problem with which the Church had been wrestling for the better part of the previous millennium. Granted that God had determined the fate of individuals at the time of their death, could anything be done by those left behind to lessen the sufferings of those already dead? This was driven by the same motivation behind the possibility of a purifying fire after death, namely that the division of people into two classes only, the saved and the damned at

the time of death, was far too harsh and that a more finely tuned division was required. Thus, in the *Enchiridion*, having made it clear that no one should hope that after he is dead he shall obtain merit with God that he has neglected to secure here, Augustine went on nonetheless to declare that it could not be denied that the souls of the dead were benefited 'by the piety of their living friends, who offer the sacrifice of the Mediator, or give alms in the church on their behalf'.[30] He recognised that there was a manner of living so good that such services were not required and one so bad that such acts would be of no help. But there was another manner of life, 'which is neither so good as not to require these services after death, nor so bad that such services are of no avail after death'.[31] Thus, when suffrages are offered for *all* the dead rather than *anyone in particular*, they act as thank-offerings for the lives of the very good, work as a form of consolation to the living when offered for the very bad, and are purgative for those in between.

Augustine was perhaps not as clear as he might have been on these classes of people. However, the ambiguities in Augustine aside, from the beginning of the fifth century the dead were more and more to be divided not merely into two groups, but into three – the entirely good, the entirely bad and the medium good/bad. Augustine recognised that there was one middle group of people who were purified of their sins. He also identified another middle group for whom prayers were worthwhile. But he did not identify these groups as one and the same. It is to the Englishman the Venerable Bede (*c.*673–735) that we owe the first identification of these two groups of the dead. As a consequence, the belief that suffrages on this side of the grave could lessen punishments for those in Purgatory entered Western Christianity. Thus in his fourth homily, written sometime in the early 730s, Bede declared:

> So the many righteous souls who are in the Church after the dissolution of the flesh are immediately received into the blessed repose of Paradise, where they wait in great joy, in vast choirs of joyous souls, for the moment when they will regain their bodies and appear before the face of God. But some who, because of their good works are destined to share the fate of the elect, but who, because of certain evil works have left the body in an unclean state, are taken after death by the flames of purgatorial fire [*flammis ignis purgatorii*] and severely punished. Either they are cleansed of the taint of their vices by a long trial [*longa examinatione*] in this fire, or thanks to the prayers, alms, fasting, tears, and Eucharistic offerings of

> their faithful friends, they are delivered from punishment and allowed to enjoy the repose of the blessed.[32]

By the end of the thirteenth century, these three groups of people – the good, the bad and the in-between – would be destined for three different places respectively: heaven, hell and Purgatory. At the time of the Last Judgement, Purgatory would be no more and only heaven and hell would remain. In terms of time, Purgatory had now superseded Abraham's Bosom and Hades as a location between death and the Last Judgement. In terms of space, it was now somewhere between heaven and hell. Originally part of hell, it had detached itself from there and moved upwards and closer to heaven, a place of hope, even though it remained a hell of temporary torments. Hell had been perceived as too awful a place to which to sentence those who were only moderately bad. Neither God's justice nor his mercy were served by that. The divine justice and mercy were better served by a place where souls, who, like most of us, were not really all that good at being really bad, could be both punished and perfected. Hell could then be preserved and reserved only for the most incorrigible.

This was the context within which Dante in 1319 was to create his own version of Purgatory. For Dante, Purgatory was not below the earth but on it. It was an island-mountain situated in the southern hemisphere, diametrically opposite Jerusalem (perhaps Australia on a very hot day?). Between the shoreline and the entrance to Purgatory dwelt those who had delayed their repentance until the end of their lives and had to wait various lengths of time before being allowed to enter the mountain of Purgatory proper through a golden gate. The mountain of Purgatory comprised seven ascending terraces, the circumference of each being smaller than the last as the summit was approached (see Plate 11 [c]). A steep passageway wound from one terrace to the next. On each of these terraces, souls were purged of their sins. These were not venial ones, but the seven capital sins in order: pride (the root of all sins), envy, wrath, sloth, avarice, gluttony and lust. These were the same sins that were punished in hell, although those souls in Purgatory had sinned less gravely than their counterparts in that place.[33] At the summit of the mountain lay the earthly Paradise, between the peak of purification and the entrance to heaven.

The progress of the soul through Purgatory could also be assisted by those on earth. Sapia of Siena was so wasted by envy that she relished

the misfortunes of others more than her own good fortune. She left her repentance too late, but was helped by the prayers of the Franciscan hermit Peter Pettinaio. 'Then, coming to the utmost edge of life,' she told Dante,

> I sought my peace with God. And even now,
> my dues would not, in penance, have been paid
> had I not been remembered in the prayers
> that Peter Pettinaio so devoutly made
> in heartfelt charity on my behalf.[34]

Souls in Purgatory too sought help from the Virgin and the saints. The envious on the third terrace were heard to say, 'Mary, pray for us. / Michael! […] Saint Peter! All the saints!'[35]

Souls who began the climb up the mountain towards purity had to want to embark on the journey. As they were progressively purged of each sin, they meditated upon its opposite virtue. Thus, the ascent to heaven was both a loss of vice and a gain in virtue. The climb itself was not an easy one:

> We scrambled through the bore of shattered rock.
> On every side its edges tightened round.
> The ground beneath us called for feet *and* hands.[36]

The punishments were severe. Thus, upon the envious,

> the light of heaven bestowed no generous ray.
> For all their eyelids, pierced by iron wires,
> were sewn up like an untamed sparrow hawk's
> when, restively, it won't keep calm and still.[37]

The fires of Purgatory replicated the fires of hell, but only temporarily and not eternally. Even at the summit, there was a wall of fire through which the penitent had to go in order to pass from Purgatory into the earthly Paradise. Once within the flame, Dante tells us,

> I could have flung myself –
> the heat that fire produced was measureless –
> for coolness, in a vat of boiling glass.[38]

Even so, the climb became easier and the punishments less severe as the soul ascended, lightened of its burden of sin:

> This mountain is by nature such
> that, down below, the start is always hard,
> yet hurts far less the more one rises up

until near the top the soul floats as lightly upwards in ascent 'as boats that travel down a flowing stream'.[39] The earthly Paradise at the summit provided the departure point for the soul's final journey to God.

Craving your indulgence

There were two further refinements to Purgatory, penances, suffrages and piety in the medieval period more generally. These were the 'Treasury of Merits' (*thesaurus meritorum*) and indulgences, or pardons. During their lifetimes, the Virgin Mary and the saints had accumulated a surplus of merits beyond those necessary for their own salvation (see Plate 26 [C]). The Treasury of Merits was the celestial bank in which these merits had been deposited. The merits of Christ were also included in it, so there was no chance of its ever running out of 'spiritual cash'. These surplus merits were available for transfer to the faithful to assist them in their salvation through the granting of indulgences (pardons, grants). In keeping with Christ's handing of the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven to the Apostle Peter such that 'whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven' (Matt. 16.19), the popes as the apostolic successors of Peter had final authority over this treasury.

Any bishops who granted indulgences did so only on authority from the pope. While he could not absolve souls in Purgatory of the punishments due to them, the pope could offer to God from the Treasury of Merits whatever was necessary for the cancelling of those punishments. Originally, for the granting of such pardons, pious Christians made financial thank-offerings to the Church. These were eventually to come before rather than after the receipt of indulgences, and thus came to function as payments for them. So payment for indulgences became a legitimate, if potentially dodgy, way of putting into practice the injunction of Jesus not to

> store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt and where thieves break in and steal; but store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor dust doth corrupt and where thieves do not break in and steal. (Matt. 6.19–20).[40]

Both Bonaventure and Aquinas had suggested that it was the Treasury of Merits that could be drawn upon to pay off the debts owed for sins. It was, however, Pope Clement VI (1291–1352) who formalised this connection in his bull *Unigenitus* (Only-begotten) in 1343. According to this, a great heap of treasure has been derived from the excess merits of Christ, the Virgin Mary and all of the martyrs and saints throughout history. Those who availed themselves of it were 'made partakers of God's friendship'. This treasury was not 'hidden in a napkin or buried in a field'. Rather, it was entrusted to be dispensed 'through blessed Peter, bearer of heaven's keys and his successors as vicars on earth'. It was to be applied to those that had confessed and were truly penitent 'now for total, now for partial remission of punishment due for temporal sins (or of temporal punishment for sins)'. There was no chance of its diminution or disappearance 'as well because of the infinite merits of Christ […] as because the more men are drawn to righteousness as a result of its application by so much more does the heap of merits increase'.[41]

But were these indulgences able to be applied not only to the living but also to those already dead?[42] The tradition of indulgences for the dead can be found from the end of the eleventh century. Then it was often connected to zeal for the Crusades. In the middle of the thirteenth century, for example, Stephen of Bourbon (d.1261) heard the story of a crusading knight who, tiring of the adventure, wished to return home. After being told by a certain William of Paris that, as a papal legate, he had the authority to grant indulgences not only to Crusaders but also to their deceased relatives on condition they complete 40 days of service, the knight agreed to stay. When the Crusade was over, this knight had a dream in which his father appeared to thank him for having freed him from Purgatory.[43]

Among medieval scholars, virtually no one denied that the dead in Purgatory could benefit from indulgences. They were much divided, however, on whether such souls were under the jurisdictional authority of the Church as were those still alive on earth. In short, did God or the pope have authority over those in this intermediate state between heaven and hell? If the pope had such authority, then the indulgences granted by him

to the dead were as guaranteed to reduce their time in Purgatory as those granted to the living. On the other hand, if the Church had no authority over the dead in Purgatory, then there was no certainty that indulgences would have any effect in reducing their time there or freeing them altogether. Such indulgences would then have only the same status as traditional suffrages. All were agreed that the effectiveness of *these* was in the hands of God and not in those of the pope. The majority opinion was probably that of Bonaventure (over against Aquinas), who argued that neither the pope nor the bishops had any jurisdiction in Purgatory:

> [I]n regard to the authority to judge, because the dead are outside the forum of the Church and of ecclesiastical judges, it seems that absolution [of penalty] is not possible for them, except as a *prayer for pardon* [that is, as a suffrage]; and so, to speak properly, *indulgence* is not granted to them. But if indulgence may be broadly called an outlay of someone's help, and a dispensation of the goods of the Church, thus is indulgence granted to them, but this dispensation is *not of a judge, but of a suppliant*.[44]

In short, indulgences were nothing more than suffrages.

This was a dispute that probably mattered little to those seeking to reduce the time in Purgatory of those they loved. It was much more about papal power – social, political and economic – than about the connection of this-worldly piety to an other-worldly Purgatory. In the end, it needed papal authority to attempt to bring it to some resolution. Pope Sixtus IV (1414–84) is mostly remembered as the pope who restored the Sistine Chapel, and after whom it was named. But in 1476, he also proclaimed the first papal indulgence for the dead in Purgatory. The indulgence sellers did not hesitate in suggesting that the older modes of suffrage were now redundant, and that no matter how long a soul had yet to suffer in Purgatory it would fly at once to heaven for the sum of six blancs. These were tickets in a medieval lottery that everybody won – well, everyone except the priests. They saw papal indulgences for the dead as a threat to one of their main sources of revenue. They 'promised to perform more effectually what for centuries had been their lucrative and exclusive privilege in celebrating masses for the dead'.[45] This forced the pope to point out that he had not been attempting to replace the traditional suffrages but rather to find a complementary way, in the mode of suffrage (*per modem suffrage*), to relieve souls in Purgatory.

Theoretically then, the question was settled in favour of the pope not having jurisdiction over the souls in Purgatory. But in practice it was otherwise, and perhaps inevitably so. The extension of indulgences to the dead administered by the pope from the Treasury of Merits entailed a vast increase in power – and wealth. As Jacques Le Goff writes:

> And for the Church, what a marvellous instrument of power! The souls in Purgatory were considered to be members of the church militant. Hence, the Church argued, it ought to have (partial) jurisdiction over them, even though God was nominally the sovereign judge in the other world. Purgatory brought to the Church not only new spiritual power but also, to put it bluntly, considerable profit […] And finally, the 'infernal' system of indulgences found powerful support in the idea of Purgatory.[46]

Johann Tetzel (1465–1519) was a German Dominican friar and preacher, a grand inquisitor in Poland and later the grand commissioner for indulgences in Germany. In 1517, his task was to head up the campaign to raise funds from the German faithful on behalf of Pope Leo X (1475–1521) by selling indulgences in order to finish the rebuilding of St Peter's Cathedral in Rome and, incidentally, to assist in replenishing the financial resources of Albrecht, archbishop of Magdeburg and Mainz. (See Plate 21 [c] for a contemporary German satire against the sale of indulgences.) It is unlikely that he did so by using the jingle attributed to him: 'As soon as the coin in the coffer rings, the soul out of Purgatory springs' (*'Sobald das Geld im Kasten klingt, die Seele aus dem Fegfeuer springt'*). But it undoubtedly reflects the sentiments expressed within his indulgences sermons:

> You should know that all who confess and in penance put alms into the coffer according to the counsel of the confessor, will obtain complete remission of their sins […] Why are you then standing there? Run for the salvation of your souls! […] Don't you hear the voices of your wailing dead parents and others who say, 'Have mercy upon me, have mercy upon me, because we are in severe punishment and pain. From this you could redeem us with a small alms and yet you do not want to do so.' Open your ears as the father says to his son and the mother to the daughter […] 'We have created you, fed you, cared for you, and left you our temporal goods. Why then are you so cruel and harsh that you do not want to save us, though it only takes so little?' […] You may have

> letters [of indulgence] which let you have, once in life and in the hour of death […] full remission of the punishment which belongs to sin.[47]

The implication of all this was that salvation was for sale by the Church and could be bought for a price. It led a young Augustinian priest, Martin Luther (1483–1546), to write a letter to his archbishop, Albrecht of Magdeburg and Mainz, on 31 October 1517, denouncing the sale of indulgences and proposing a disputation on 95 theses that he had drawn up and included in his letter (and, according to legend, nailed to the door of the Castle Church in Wittenberg – see Plate 22 [BW]). His tone was humble, but granting that Albrecht was to receive half of the funds raised in Leo X's campaign, he was unlikely to receive a sympathetic hearing. 'Spare me, Most Reverend Father in Christ and Most Illustrious Prince,' Luther wrote,

> that I, the dregs of humanity, have so much boldness that I have dared to think of a letter to the height of your Sublimity. The Lord Jesus is my witness that, conscious of my smallness and baseness, I have long deferred what I am now shameless enough to do, moved thereto most of all by the duty of fidelity which I acknowledge that I owe to your most Reverend Fatherhood in Christ. Meanwhile, therefore, may your Highness deign to cast an eye upon one speck of dust, and for the sake of your pontifical clemency to heed my prayer. Papal indulgences for the building of St Peter's are circulating under your most distinguished name, and as regards them, I do not bring accusation against the outcries of the preachers, which I have not heard, so much as I grieve over the wholly false impressions which the people have conceived from them; to wit, the unhappy souls believe that if they have purchased letters of indulgence they are sure of their salvation; again, that so soon as they cast their contributions into the money-box, souls fly out of purgatory; furthermore, that these graces [i.e. the graces conferred in the indulgences] are so great that there is no sin too great to be absolved, even, as they say – though the thing is impossible – if one had violated the Mother of God; again, that a man is free, through these indulgences, from all penalty and guilt.[48]

Rhetorically humble it may have been, but Albrecht would have heard the threat made by Luther at the end of his letter. For Luther went on to pray that the archbishop might do away with the treatise instructing the

preachers of pardons and impose on them another way of preaching, lest, he wrote, there arise someone

> who will publish writings in which he will confute them and that treatise, to the shame of your Most Illustrious Sublimity. I shrink very much from thinking that this will be done, and yet I fear that it will come to pass, unless there is some speedy remedy.[49]

Albrecht would have been left in little doubt that Luther was about to cause trouble. And Luther duly did just that.

Thus, with a dispute over whether the pope could guarantee the eternal destiny of the living *and* the dead in Purgatory, the most important event in the history of Western Christendom – the Reformation – began. Human life on this side of the grave was radically changed as the consequence of a quarrel about life on the other side. Christianity was irrevocably divided into Catholic and Protestant. And all the issues around the afterlife that had seemed more or less settled were once again up for debate.

Chapter Five

The Sleep of Death

> About the same time others arose in Arabia, putting forward a doctrine foreign to the truth. They said that during the present time the human soul dies and perishes with the body, but that at the time of resurrection they will be renewed together.
>
> Eusebius, *Historia ecclesiastica*

The dying soul

The Catholic system of Purgatory, and the economy of the hereafter that had been built upon it, was dependent on two key ideas. The first was that of the immortality of the soul, at least in the sense that, although the body died, the soul continued on. By the time of the Reformation, that the soul was *naturally* immortal had become an integral part of the eschatology of the Catholic Church and the penitential and liturgical apparatus that went with it. The second idea was that, after death, the soul remained conscious. Only thus could the person be capable of experiencing the joys of heaven and the pains of hell or Purgatory between death and the Last Judgement.

By the early part of the sixteenth century, both ideas had been brought into question within the Catholic Church. And sufficiently so that Pope Leo X (1475–1521), in the first year of his pontificate in 1513, at the eighth session of the fifth Lateran Council, reasserted the natural immortality of the soul. He did so against both those who thought the soul naturally mortal and those who thought that the same (universal) soul animated all men. Thus, in his bull *Apostolici regiminis* (Of Apostolic government), he declared that

> we […] condemn and reprobate all those who assert that the intellectual soul is mortal, or one and the same in all men, and those who call these things in question, seeing that the soul is not only truly, and of itself, and

> essentially the form of the human body [...] but likewise is immortal, and, according to the number of bodies into which it is infused, singularly multiplied, multiplied, and to be multiplied.[1]

Leo X was reacting to the development of such ideas within the Italian Renaissance, particularly in the universities of Padua, Ferrara and Bologna, where the natural immortality of the soul was being challenged by readings of Aristotle that argued on the one hand for the natural mortality of the soul and, on the other, for the existence of an eternal rational soul in which each individual participated only during his life time. In neither case was there a place for *individual* conscious existence immediately after death or into eternity.

In spite of Leo X, the challenge to the prevailing orthodoxy continued in the works of the Aristotelian Pietro Pomponazzi (1462–1524), successively professor at Padua, Ferrara and Bologna. In his *De immortalitate animae* (On the immortality of the soul) in 1516 and his *Apologia* (Apology) in 1517, he attempted to find a way between those Aristotelians supportive of there being only one eternal soul, those supportive of the mortality of the individual soul and the orthodox position on the natural immortality of the individual soul.

According to Pomponazzi, man is suspended between the animals and the angels. Like animals, and unlike angels, men are corporeal beings and mortal. But unlike animals, they are not completely defined by their bodies. The soul's capacity for knowing enables it to rise above the particular by grasping the universal and the immaterial. In this sense it participates in the life of pure intelligence and thus in immortality. However, although our souls can thus participate in immortality, they are inseparable from our mortal bodies and cannot survive our deaths. For souls, like bodies, are generated and not created by God. As Pomponazzi put it, the 'soul is essentially and truly mortal but relatively immortal'.[2]

With the mortality of the soul, the prospect of rewards and punishments immediately after death disappeared, along with the places in which it was located. The consequence of this was, on the face of it, that the main incentives for the virtuous life on this side of the grave – rewards for the righteous and punishments for the wicked – also disappeared. This might be true, declared Pomponazzi, for 'the greater part of men, if they do good, do it more from fear of eternal punishment than from hope of eternal good, since punishments are better known to us than that eternal good'.[3] Even the

immortality of the soul, he suggested, was invented as a means to bring men to virtue by lawgivers 'not caring for truth but only for righteousness'.[4] For the philosopher who lives by truth, however, there is no need of post-mortem rewards and punishments. For virtue is its own reward and vice itself its own punishment (however difficult this might be to see for those of us of a less stoic and less virtuous disposition than Pomponazzi).[5]

'To sleep, perchance to dream?'

As we will see, the assertion of the mortality of the soul did not necessarily rule out the possibility of rewards and punishments after death. For those who saw human identity as essentially determined by its corporeality, the joys of heaven and the horrors of hell would not begin immediately after death but only after the bodily resurrection of the dead and the Last Judgement. However, it was not necessary to assert the *mortality* of the soul in order to subvert the doctrine of Purgatory. It was just as effectively undermined by the claim that, although the soul was immortal, it was *sleeping* between death and the Last Judgement and thus incapable of feeling anything, whether of rewards or punishments. This was Luther's tactic.

Luther was too much of a Platonist to undermine Purgatory by an Aristotelian argument for the mortality of the soul. And he rejected the Aristotelian position that the soul was the form of the body. Rather, between death and the reunion of the body and soul, the soul slept freed from the body. Luther knew that the idea of the unconscious sleep of the soul effectively destabilised the notion of Purgatory as much as the denial of the soul's post-mortem life. Thus, in his 1544 lectures on Genesis, he declared:

> The body is destroyed by putrefaction and worms. But what, it is asked, becomes of the soul before that Day of Judgement? […] But the answer which Christ prescribes is simple when He says in Matt. 22.32: 'God is not God of the dead, but of the living.' This makes us sure that our souls are living and are sleeping in peace, and that they are not being racked by any tortures.[6]

Since the time of Christ, he went on, there has been no Bosom of Abraham in which the dead dwell. Rather, when we die, we are carried into the bosom of Christ, although Luther is uncertain just where this place might be. Like

dreamless sleep in our present lives, in the sleep of the soul after death, there will be no consciousness of the passing of time: 'Salomon judgeth that the dead are a sleepe, and feele nothing at all. For the dead lye there accompting neyther dayes nor yeares, but when they are awaked, they shall seeme to have slept scarce one minute.'[7] The sleep of death will end on the day of the Last Judgement, when all the dead will awake reunited with their bodies. Thus,

> we shall censure ourselves that we were surprised or alarmed at such a sleep in the hour of death, and [we will] suddenly come alive out of the grave and from decomposition, and entirely well, meet our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ in the clouds.[8]

Luther was, however, sufficiently ambivalent about the sleep of the soul for later Lutheran reformers to tread quietly around this doctrine. And their reticence was reinforced by the uptake of mortalism in the radical wings of the European Reformation. All of these radicals were dissatisfied with Protestant emphasis on the objectivity of salvation, which underplayed the significance of personal religious experience. They insisted upon the baptism of 'believers', 'or on the possession of the gifts of the Spirit, or on the experience of regeneration'.[9] In short, they were less interested in the reformation of the existing order than in what they took to be a restitution of New Testament Christianity. Within such a biblically inspired Christianity, they found no place for the conscious existence of the soul between death and the Last Day. Although the distinction was even then at times opaque, they can be distinguished into 'psychopannychists' and 'thnetopsychists'. As Norman Burns puts it:

> The psychopannychists believed that the immortal substance called soul literally slept until the resurrection of the body; the thnetopsychists, denying that the soul was an immortal substance, believed that the soul slept after death only in a figurative sense. Both groups of soul sleepers believed in the personal immortality of the individual after the resurrection of the body.[10]

Both groups should be distinguished from those annihilationists who denied both the immortality of the individual soul and the resurrection of the body.

Although mortalism thrived among radical Protestants in Europe, it appears to have had less of an uptake in sixteenth-century England. In its

Lutheran form, however, it was brought to the attention of English believers in Sir Thomas More's *Dialogue* in 1529. This was the year in which the pious Catholic humanist More (1478–1535) became Henry VIII's Lord Chancellor (before, five years later, falling foul of a king who was ambiguously to embrace Protestantism so that he might bigamously embrace Anne Boleyn). For More, heretical views on death and the afterlife were literally matters of life and death. His key criticism of Luther's soul-sleeping focused on the loss of the incentive to lead a moral life: 'What shall he care,' asked More, 'how long he live in sin, that believeth Luther, that he shall after this life neither feel well nor ill in body nor soul till the day of doom?' And not least because 'if they shall be damned, yet they say it shall be long or [before] they feel it. For Luther saith that all souls shall sleep and feel neither good nor bad after this life till doomsday.'[11]

More's *Dialogue* was directed not only against Luther but against the latter's English disciple William Tyndale (1494?–1536), whose English translation of the New Testament had been smuggled into England from 1526. Such vernacular translations were emblematic of Protestantism's determination to replace medieval Catholicism with biblical Christianity. The Catholic debate about mortalism had been conducted within the philosophical space created between Aristotelianism and Platonism. But for Protestant mortalists, it was not a debate within philosophy but against it. For them, revelation was against reason, and Jerusalem opposed to Athens. For them, true Christianity had, in short, been tainted by pagan philosophy. As Tyndale put it in his response to More's *Dialogue*:

> The heathen philosophers […] did put that the souls did ever live. And the pope joineth the spiritual doctrine of Christ and the fleshly doctrine of philosophers together; things so contrary that they cannot agree […] And because the fleshly-minded pope consenteth unto heathen doctrine, therefore he corrupteth the scripture to establish it.[12]

Moreover, Tyndale argued (pretty reasonably), the Bible knew nothing of the immortality of the soul. It was focused on the resurrection of the body and the Day of Judgement. Christ and his Apostles, he declared, 'taught no other; but warned to look for Christ's coming again every hour'.[13] Moreover, if souls were in heaven immediately after death, there was no need of any resurrection of the dead: 'And ye, in putting them [souls] in heaven, hell, and purgatory, destroy the arguments wherewith

Christ and Paul prove the resurrection […] The true faith putteth the resurrection, which we be warned to look for every hour.'[14] The resurrection of the body was, for Tyndale, the beginning of salvation and not just an unnecessary addition to souls already enjoying the Beatific Vision. 'I am not persuaded,' he wrote,

> that they be already in the full glory that Christ is in, or the elect angels of God are in. Neither is it any article of my faith: for if it were so I see not but then the preaching of the resurrection of the flesh were a thing in vain.[15]

William Tyndale and his New Testament collaborator John Frith (1503–33) were the only two English writers openly to endorse soul-sleeping in the sixteenth century. Their commitment to the Protestant cause came at a price. Frith was burnt for denying the doctrines of Purgatory and transubstantiation in London in July 1533; and Tyndale was strangled and then burnt in Holland in October 1536.

It is difficult to estimate the influence of soul-sleeping in the England of the sixteenth century. The first Anglican and genuinely Protestant Prayer Book of Edward VI, published in 1549, showed an afterlife of studied ambiguity. The final prayer at the service of the burial of the dead asked that the souls of the dead 'delivered from the burden of the flesh, be in joy and felicity', while the collect for Holy Communion when there is a burial beseeched God 'to raise us from the death of sin into a life of righteousness, that when we shall depart this life, we may sleep in him'. Still, the overall emphasis is without doubt on the Day of Resurrection: 'when that dreadful day of the general resurrection shall come, make him to rise also with the just and righteous and receive this body again to glory, then made pure and incorruptible.'[16]

If the Prayer Book of 1549 was ambiguous, that of 1552 wasn't. Already by this time, Anglicanism was declaring itself a *via media*, on this occasion between a Catholicism that seemed to deny the necessity of the resurrection of the body and a mortalism that denied the conscious life of the soul between death and the Last Judgement. Thus, the thirty-ninth of the Forty-two Articles of Religion included in this edition of the Prayer Book declared unorthodox those who thought the life to come belonged only to the soul and not also to the body. The fortieth article declared both soul-sleepers and soul-deniers outside of the bounds of right belief:

> They which say, that the souls of such as depart hence, do sleep being without all sense, feeling, or perceiving, until the day of judgment; or affirm that the souls die with the bodies, and at the last day shall be raised up with the same; do utterly dissent from the right belief, declared to us in holy scripture.[17]

That mortalism was considered unorthodox in the Church of England was, theologically at least, the consequence of the dominance of Genevan Calvinism in the Anglican theology of the reigns of Edward VI (1547–53), Elizabeth I (1558–1603) and James I (1603–25). John Calvin (1509–64) was a vehement opponent of mortalism. In his tract *Psychopannychia* (1542), he saw it as an evil that 'has lately begun to send forth sparks, being stirred up by some dregs of Anabaptists', by which he meant the proponents of the Radical Reformation.[18] He was the first to make a clear distinction between those mortalists who 'imagine that [the soul] sleeps in a state of insensibility from Death to the Judgement-day when it will awake from its sleep' and those who maintain that it 'perishes along with the body, and becomes evanescent till the period when the whole man shall be raised again'.[19] It was also Calvin who in this work established the scriptural parameters within which the debate would be carried out for the next century. As a believer in the immortality of the soul, he argued for its conscious existence between death and the Last Judgement, although he studiously avoided any suggestion of purgation or spiritual development beyond the grave. Having got rid of Purgatory, he had to reinstate the Bosom of Abraham. Thus, the state of the soul between death and the final day was a static one. The souls of the elect waited in Abraham's Bosom for the perfection of their happiness when reunited with their bodies, while the reprobate awaited in chains their ultimate and eternal punishment:

> The fact that the blessed gathering of saintly spirits is called 'Abraham's Bosom' is enough to assure us of being received after this pilgrimage by the common father of the faithful, that he may share the fruit of his faith with us. Meanwhile, since Scripture everywhere bids us wait in expectation for Christ's coming, and defers until then the crown of glory, let us be content with the limits divinely set for us: namely, that the souls of the pious, having ended the toil of their warfare, enter into blessed rest, where in glad expectation they await the enjoyment of promised glory, and so all things are held in suspense until Christ the Redeemer appear. The

> lot of the reprobate is doubtless the same as that which Jude assigns to the devils: to be held in chains until they are dragged to the punishment appointed for them.[20]

Calvin's concerns about mortalism were shared by the Swiss reformer Heinrich Bullinger (1504–75). The tenth dialogue of his *An Holsome Antidotus or Counter-poysen, agaynst the Pestylent Heresye and Secte of the Anabaptistes*, published in England in 1548, was primarily a scriptural argument against soul-sleeping. But it also provided philosophical reasons for the immortality and incorruptibility of the soul.[21] His major contribution to the debate occurred in *The Second Helvetic Confession* in 1566, a creed for which he was primarily responsible, and one that was endorsed by all the Reformed Churches. 'We say,' declared Bullinger,

> that man doth consist of two, and those diverse substances in one person; of a soul immortal (as that which being separated from his body doth neither sleep nor die), and a mortal body, which, notwithstanding, at the last judgment shall be raised again from the dead, that from henceforth the whole man may continue forever in life or in death. We condemn all those who mock at, or by subtle disputation call into doubt, the immortality of the soul, or say that the soul sleeps, or that it is part of God.[22]

Radical mortalists

For mainstream Protestantism, the fear of mortalism was as much political as eschatological. Mortalists were uninterested in the destiny of the soul between death and the Last Judgement, not least because they expected the return of Christ imminently. And they were not averse to helping God usher in the Last Day by turning the world upside down. They had heard Jesus say, 'I have not come to bring peace but a sword' (Matt. 10.34), and many were more than willing to assist his Second Coming by taking up arms on his behalf. The mortality of the soul and the imminence of the Last Judgement served revolutionary ideas well. Both thrived, for example, in the English Revolution of the mid-seventeenth century. 'It is no new work of Satan to sow heresies, and breede Heretickes,' declared one pamphleteer in 1651, 'but they never came up so thick as in these latter times.'[23] That heresies abounded, or at least were thought to do so, was demonstrated

by the Calvinist Thomas Edwards (*c.*1599–1648) in his 1646 'bestseller' *Gangraena* (Gangrene), the title of which gave eloquent expression to what he thought of the vast number of heresies that he controversially catalogued. Of the 267 heresies that he listed, 11 related to mortalism. He did perhaps draw finer distinctions than really existed. But his list shows the sorts of options that he judged were corrupting the Church. We can classify them into those that support the sleep or death of the soul and those that teach the annihilation of the soul. Among the former we find:

> That the soul of man is mortal as the soul of a beast, and dies with the body […] That the souls of the faithful after death, do sleep till the day of judgement and are not in a capacity of acting any thing for God, 'tis with them as 'tis with a man that is in some pleasing dream […] That none of the souls of the Saints go to Heaven where Christ is, but Heaven is empty of the Saints till the resurrection of the dead […] No man is yet in hell, neither shall any be there until the judgement; for God doth not hang first, and judge after […] That it is injustice in God to punish the souls of the wicked in Hell while their bodies lie at rest in their graves, for seeing both were sinners together, both must be sufferers together.[24]

Among the heresies that teach the soul's annihilation, Edwards found:

> That man had life before God breathed into him, and that which God breathed into him was part of the divine Essence, and shall return into God again […] That the soul dies with the body, and all things shall have an end, but God only shall remain forever […] Every creature in the first estate of creation was God, and every creature is God, every creature that hath life and breath being an efflux from God, and shall return into God again, be swallowed up in him as a drop is in the ocean […] There is no resurrection at all of the bodies of men after this life, nor no heaven nor hell after this life, nor no devils […] There is no Hell, but in this life, and that's the legal terrours and fears which men have in their consciences.[25]

The heresies identified by Edwards reflected a number of deep-seated concerns in the seventeenth century. For some at least, the extinction of life at the moment of death was a more comforting prospect than eternal punishment in the fires of hell, or even a temporary punishment followed by extinction. The founder of the Muggletonian sect, Lodowick Muggleton (1609–98),

spoke passionately of his youthful fear of being cast into hell after his death and there being tormented by the Devil, eternally and without respite. 'These things,' he wrote, 'wrought in my mind exceeding great Fear, and stir'd me up to a more exceeding Righteousness of life, thinking thereby that my Righteous Life would have cast out those tormenting Fears, but it did not.'[26]

In spite of his fears of hell, Muggleton rejected the annihilation of the individual at the time of death and accepted the desirability of some Day of Judgement on which the good would be rewarded and the wicked punished. He and his cousin John Reeve (1608–58) declared themselves to be the Lord's last two witnesses and prophets (Rev. 11.1–14), thus ensuring salvation to those who believed their teachings and damnation to those who did not. This had the additional benefit of ensuring their own salvation as well, thus mitigating Muggleton's own fears of hell, if not the fears of those not persuaded by his and Reeve's prophetic pretensions. For the unpersuaded, little mercy would be shown. Their *Joyful News from Heaven* brought no joy to the damned. Hell and its devils would be in the very bodies of the wicked. These hellish corpses, they wrote,

> shall be fiery bodies, of spiritual darknesse, yea bodies of all unrighteousnesse, having all their wicked deeds of their former bodies conveyed into these bodies, as fewell to kindle the fire of new sorrows […] so their bodies shall be their Kingdome of Hell, and their proud spirits, that had pleasure in unrighteousnesse, shall be the Devils; that shall be barr'd in close prisoners within their bodies […] then […] shall their spirits and bodies burn together like a flame of fire, that is all dark as pitch, they never stirring from their place of resurrection.[27]

For those mortalists who argued for the annihilation of the individual soul at death, there was no difference between animals and humans. Ecclesiastes 3.19–20 was a favourite biblical text:

> For the fate of humans and the fate of animals is the same; as one dies, so dies the other. They all have the same breath, and humans have no advantage over the animals; for all is vanity. All go to one place; all are from the dust, and all turn to ash again.

Such plebeian materialism was however often uneasily combined with a pantheism that found the divine in everything. Thus, the independent preacher

Richard Coppin (*fl. c.*1645–59) found God in all things: 'The same God which dwels in one dwels in another, even in all; and in the same fullness as he in one, he is in everyone.'[28] The Ranter Joseph Salmon (*fl.* 1647–56) believed that 'God is that pure and perfect being in whom we all are, move and live; that secret blood, breath and life, that silently courseth through the hidden veins and close arteries of the whole creation'.[29]

It is difficult to discern the specific sources of the pantheism of the English radicals. But they were tapping into traditions of Christian mysticism. Many works of religion focused on the 'inner life' were published in the 1640s, any of which might have played a role in the development of pantheism. Translations of some of the works of the Dutch founder of the Family of Love, Hendrik Niclaes (*c.*1502–*c.*1580), began to be published from 1646. From 1645, the better-known books of the Lutheran mystic Jacob Boehme (1575–1624) appeared in English translation. A year later, Nicholas of Cusa's (*c.*1400–64) *The Vision of God* was published in English, followed by the late fourteenth-century mystical work *Theologia Germanica* and the Lutheran mystic Valentine Weigel's *The Vision of God*, both in 1648. In contrast to those Christian traditions that emphasised the qualitative distinction between God and the world – the consequence of God's having created the world out of nothing – the Christian mystical tradition, drawing on the Neoplatonism of Plotinus (204–70 CE), emphasised the participation of the world and the soul in the divine – the result of seeing these as having emanated from and thus still being part of the divine. The eschatological consequence of this was that eternal life was a reabsorption of the soul after death into the divine, whence it originally came.

We can also look to such mystical writings as the sources, directly or indirectly, of radical views of heaven and hell. For members of the Family of Love and for Boehme and Weigel, heaven and hell were not in the hereafter but in the here and now. Such views were common among the English radicals. For the Ranter William Bond (*fl.* 1650s), for example:

> There was neither heaven nor hell except in a man's conscience, for if he had a good fortune and did live well, that was heaven: and if he lived poor and miserable, that was hell, for then he would die like a cow or a horse.[30]

That God was everywhere also led to doubts about a localised heaven. The Ranter Jacob Bauthumley (1613–92), in his *The Light and Dark Sides of God* (1650), claimed to be able to make little sense of God as dwelling in

a localised heaven, seeing him rather as an omnipresent spirit 'in low and dark appearances, as well as in the most glorious'. And his idea of a God as equally in everything drove his mortalism: 'I am willing,' he declared,

> to let fall any carnall apprehension of a visible or corporeal enjoyment of God, or any expectation of a happy condition out of God after this life and dayes are ended, being willing to resign and give up to God what he is in me in flesh, that so God may be all in all.[31]

That we, as human beings, are all 'of one piece' and not composed of a mortal body and an immortal soul is a relatively modern idea, often aligned with an implicit scientific materialism. It is tempting to see the radical mortalists of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries as precursors of it, as evidence of the way in which the Reformation was paving the way for modernity. But their materialism was often united to their pantheism. Spirit and matter, God and nature commingled. They often looked back to biblical images of the unity of the person rather than forward to science. Their doctrines, like their religious allegiances, were fluid. This is especially well exemplified in Laurence Clarkson (1615–67) – an Anglican, a Presbyterian, a Dipper, a Seeker, a Ranter and finally a Muggletonian. On the one hand, he appeared to be a committed materialist. The body, he wrote, after it is laid in its grave, 'is buried in its heaven, glory and happiness, where it shall rot and consume in its own nature for ever and ever'.[32] On the other hand, he also used the typical mystical image of the spirit returning into the ocean of the divine whence it first came:

> even as a stream from the Ocean was distinct in itself while it was a stream, but when returned to the Ocean, was therein swallowed and become one with the Ocean; so the spirit of man while in the body, was distinct from God, but when death came it returned to God, and so became one with God, yea God itself.[33]

A sage from Malmesbury, a Leveller and a poet

Mortalism allied with materialism was not merely the prerogative of Reformed radical riff-raff. It also engaged some of the most respected minds of the seventeenth century. The mortalism of the philosopher

from Malmesbury, Thomas Hobbes (1588–1679), for example, did arise from his materialism. For Hobbes, the notion of the soul as a substance incorporeal was a nonsense. Because, according to him, 'substance' and 'body' meant the same thing, then '*Substance incorporeall* are words which, when they are joined together, destroy one another, as if a man should say an *Incorporeall Body*'.[34] Moreover, he viewed the notion of the soul's existence independently of the body as the cause of religious errors – of the doctrine of eternal torments, of the ghosts of the dead walking abroad, of exorcisms, of prayers to the saints, of indulgences and of Purgatory – 'of exemption for a time, or for ever, from the fire of Purgatory, wherein these Incorporeall Substances are pretended by burning to be cleansed, and made fit for Heaven'.[35]

Crucial to Hobbes's critique of the soul was his denial of its *natural* immortality. That the souls of men were substances distinct from their bodies that subsisted after death by virtue of their intrinsic nature was, Hobbes argued, a disease caught by the Church from the Greeks. For Hobbes, Scripture was against any notion of natural immortality. According to the Scriptures, he wrote, 'soul' and 'life' meant the same thing. Thus 'eternal life' could only mean the revivifying of the body on the Day of Resurrection. Immortality was not the soul's natural right, but a supernatural divine gift conferred upon the bodies of the elect in a future time.

This eschatology played a central role in the political theory of his *Leviathan* (1651), for which Hobbes is best remembered. For Hobbes, the Kingdom of God can only be a kingdom on this earth. The biblical type of this kingdom was the civil kingdom inaugurated by God in the covenant made between him and the people of Israel. Moreover, it was one in which ecclesiastical power on the one hand and civil power on the other could not be separated. Thus, Hobbes's interpretation of the biblical notion of the Kingdom of God as an earthly kingdom under the rule of one sovereign with no distinction between his spiritual and temporal powers was a direct criticism, not only of the Catholic Church's belief that *it* was the existing Kingdom of God, but also of its belief that the Kingdom of God was a spiritual and not a temporal matter. Thus, as J. G. A. Pocock writes,

> The tactic of combining apocalyptic with mortalism served [...] to destroy the claim that the Church possessed the keys to an individual's salvation at the hour of his death; he could be saved or damned only by an action

> which God was to take in the future, and the Church was merely a community of faithful expectant of that future act.[36]

The denial of an intermediate state together with an emphasis on the coming Kingdom of God served also as a critique of the Calvinist view that the Kingdom of God had begun with the resurrection of Christ, and that, consequently, the Calvinists, as the representatives of the true Kingdom of God on earth, had authority over civil sovereigns. Against the Calvinists, Hobbes argued that the Kingdom of God did not begin with Christ's resurrection, but would do so only on the Day of Judgement. For Hobbes, therefore, both Catholic and Presbyterian doctrines of God's Kingdom were designed to usurp legitimate sovereign power. The sovereignty of the king was a precursor of the sovereignty of Christ when he returned to earth to usher in the Kingdom of God. The resurrected elect would not be carried from earth into heaven. Rather, on this earth, Christ in his risen body would reign forever over the elect into an infinite future. On that day:

> the Faithfull shall rise again, with glorious and spirituall Bodies, and bee his Subjects in that his Kingdome […] That they shall neither marry, nor be given in marriage, nor eate and drink, as they did in their natural bodies; but live for ever in their individual persons.[37]

Like the faithful, the wicked too would rise on the Day of Judgement to be punished, both physically and spiritually, in the sight of their sovereign. The wicked would be in the same state as they were after the sin of Adam. They would marry, be given in marriage and reproduce as now. But they would also face the certainty of a second and eternal death: 'For though the Scripture bee clear for an universall Resurrection; yet wee do not read, that to any of the Reprobate is promised an Eternall life.'[38]

Hobbes was hard put to avoid those scriptural passages that implied everlasting torments in eternal fire to be the fate of the damned. However, as we will see later, he foreshadowed John Locke's solution to the same quandary by arguing that everlasting fire does not entail the eternal survival of those within it. Although the fire is everlasting, he argued, 'it cannot thence be inferred that hee who shall be cast into that fire, or be tormented with those torments, shall endure, and resist them so, as to be eternally burnt, and tortured, and yet never be destroyed nor die.'[39]

This notion of the ultimate annihilation of the wicked was philosophically made possible by Hobbes's denial of *natural* immortality and his understanding of it as a supernatural gift. Thus the wicked could – logically would – die a second death. Although he intimated that a sovereign could justly condemn the wicked to eternal torments, theologically he saw the final annihilation of the wicked as a result of the mercy of God. It was this concept of God's mercy that was at the heart of all attempts from the time of Hobbes onwards to mitigate the idea of the eternity of hell's torments. It seems hard to say, he wrote,

> that God who is the Father of Mercies, that doth in Heaven and earth all that hee will; that hath the hearts of all men in his disposing; that worketh in men both to doe, and to will; and without whose free gift a man hath neither inclination to good, nor repentance of evill, should punish mens transgressions without any end of time, and with all the extremity of torture, that men can imagine, and more.[40]

Eight years before the publication of Hobbes's *Leviathan*, the mortalist position which Hobbes exemplified had been publicised in a 1643 work by the Leveller Richard Overton (*fl.* 1640–63). 'All is vanity' (Eccles. 3.19) again provided the proof text. Philosophically, Overton attempted to reduce the concept of the immortality of the soul to absurdity. But the overall weight of his argument for the soul's mortality was scriptural and within the framework of the Christian doctrines of Creation, Fall and redemption. Crucial to his argument was Genesis 2.7: 'Then the Lord God […] breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and the man became a living soul.' For Overton, as for Hobbes after him, this could not mean 'an Angelical Entitie; a supernatural, spiritual, infinite Existence to be couched in the flesh, or mens corpulency; whose being doth not depend upon it', but rather a living being who, as such, would have lived forever had he not sinned.[41] Thus, for Overton, the Fall of Adam and Eve did not entail only the mortality of the body but of the whole being. Moreover, he maintained, on the assumption of the immortality of the soul, no sense could be made of the resurrection of the body on the Day of Judgement. As he put it in his typically exuberant way:

> If the Soul (as they say) be the very life […] and the body but its instrument; then the body now hath no more life in it, then when it is reduced

> to the earth; but is as dead as a dore-naile: And so at the Resurrection cannot be raised from death; and the union of it to the Soul at the Resurrection they Fabulate on, is but an addition of corpulency or gross matter to the Soul which in truth is no Resurrection at all from the dead […] For Resurrection from the death is not the addition of gross matter to life; but the Restoration of life from death.[42]

It was virtually impossible in the seventeenth century for the orthodox, whether Catholic or Protestant, to contemplate the possibility that sound Christian doctrine should not include the belief in the immortality of the soul. There was a firmly held conviction that the denial of the soul's immortality was the thin end of a wedge that would lead to the collapse of, so to say, civilisation as they knew it. The pugnacious Anglican Alexander Ross (1591–1654) declared:

> These Arabian Pygmies will never be able with such engines to overthrow the soules immortalitie, which is the strong fort and Citadell of every good Christian in his afflictions. Let there be but way given to this doctrine of the Saducees, we must bid farewell to lawes and civility, nay to Religion and Christianity.[43]

They were better suited, he decided, to dwell in the bodies of beasts than in their own.

In their denial of the immortality of the soul and their advocacy of the psycho-physical unity of the human individual, Hobbes and Overton saw themselves as endorsing Scripture against philosophy. Their scriptural interpretations should not be read as a disguised and dishonest philosophical naturalism. The same must be said of the mortalism of John Milton (1608–74). Milton's conviction that individuals shall only rise on the Day of Resurrection was totally based on Scripture. It was clearly stated for the first time in his *De doctrina Christiana* (On Christian doctrine, *c.*1658–60). As with Overton, so also with Milton, Genesis 2.7 was central. Man became a living soul, he wrote,

> whence it may be inferred […] that man is a living being, intrinsically and properly one and individual, not compound or separable, not, according to the common opinion, made up and framed of two different natures, as of soul and body.[44]

'Flying like an eagle in the air'

All my disciples must be airy,
And dance as nimble as a Fairy,
Must never think of sordid Dying,
But practice must the Art of Flying.

Anon. (1701)

As a result of the Protestant commitment to the principle of *sola scriptura* (Scripture alone), Protestant mortalism moved within a biblical space. The Bible provided the unity within Protestantism, but it also provoked its diversity, not least in views of the afterlife. This was because the only limit on Protestant readings of the Bible was the imagination of its interpreters. Nowhere was this better exemplified than in the case of John Asgill (1659–1738), lawyer, Member of Parliament and (very) amateur theologian. On 18 December 1707, Asgill was expelled from the House of Commons for blasphemy contained in a book that he had published anonymously in 1700. It was a work that provoked consternation, outrage and, as the verse above suggests, not a little mirth. As Daniel Defoe remarked of it in 1704: 'When Men Pore upon the Sacred Mysteries of Religion with the Mathematical Engines of Reason, they make such incoherent stuff of it, as would make one pity them.'[45] The book was entitled *An argument proving that according to the covenant of eternal life revealed in the Scriptures, man may be translated from hence into that eternal life without passing through death, although the humane nature of Christ himself could not be thus translated till he had passed through death.*

According to Asgill, as a result of the Fall of Man, death reigned from Adam until the time of Christ with two exceptions – the Old Testament worthies Enoch and Elijah, who were translated to heaven prior to their deaths (see Plate 23 [BW]). Unlike them, Christ had died. But in his resurrection, he had broken the Law of Death. Having risen, Christ 'stood perfectly qualified to make his *Exit* by way of Translation [...] And thereupon God sent him down one of the Chariots of Heaven to convey him thither.'[46]

The remarkable consequence of Christ's death, resurrection and ascension was that death was no longer necessary for mortals. Those who have faith that Christ has overcome the inexorability of death need not die but

can be translated directly to heaven. On the face of it then, since Christ's ascension, death ought to have been abolished. Asgill's explanation for its continuation was a psychological one. In part, men died because they expected to; in part, too, men died because of their fear of death. For those who, like Asgill, had faith in translation, the precedent of death was broken, the fear of death removed. Thus, he declared:

> I shall not go hence *by returning unto the Dust* […] But that I shall *make* my Exit by way of *Translation*, which I claim as a dignity belonging to that Degree in the Science of Eternal Life, of which I profess my self a graduat, according to the true intent and meaning of the Covenant of Eternal Life revealed in the Scriptures. And if after this, I die like other Men, I declare my self to die of no religion.[47]

From his time on, he believed, translation would be the rule rather than the exception.

But what of those who had died or would die without the benefit of Asgill's faith in translation? Like Overton, Milton and Hobbes, Asgill denied the immateriality and immortality of the soul. Thus, there was no conscious life after death. Asgill's eschatology, however, blended materialism and pantheism. Those who died without faith in translation, he maintained, neither died nor slept after death. Rather, their bodies were reabsorbed into matter, their spirits into God. The body was left to the elements out of which it was first composed. The individual spirit surrendered itself 'into the Ocean of Life, from whence it first flowed', as rivers are 'merged in the Ocean of their original Fountain'.[48]

That said, unlike the radical sectarians, Asgill did not envisage this reabsorption of individual spirits into God to last forever. On the contrary; it would last only until the Day of Resurrection. Then, God would reunite every spirit with its own body. After the just had risen, there would still be a period of time for perfecting the belief in translation. When both the resurrected and those that were still alive on the Day of Resurrection had learnt this faith, the general resurrection of the dead would follow, the righteous 'to be caught up together in the Air'.[49]

Asgill was aware that his work would be controversial. Whoever thinks anything within it unfair to God or man, he wrote, 'let him, or her, burn this Book, and cast a Stone at him that wrote it'.[50] There were indeed many willing to take up Asgill's challenge to burn his work (literally) and

to bury him beneath an avalanche of stones (metaphorically, at least). He was denounced for his pride and conceit and lampooned mercilessly. Even if on occasion, perhaps not untypically for members of the legal profession, the pleasure he derived from the presentation of an argument exceeded the genuineness of his belief in it, he was without doubt seriously committed to the unique centrepiece of his theology – translation.

England in the early eighteenth century was neither particularly intolerant nor especially religious. But Asgill signalled to many all the dangers of idiosyncratic scripturalism. His jocularity, his inwardly guided interpretation of the Scriptures, his mortalist tendencies and, above all, his arrogant confidence in his truth about the afterlife – translation into heaven: these were all frightening echoes of a world only recently turned right-side up from the terrors of sectarianism and the fears of papal domination. Parliament returned Asgill to the debtors' prison from which it had called him. There he remained for the next 30 years of his life. No doubt to his eternal chagrin, John Asgill died, untranslated, in 1738.

Variations on an Arabian theme

John Asgill was not alone in his eschatological eccentricities. It was perhaps inevitable that the Protestant principle of *sola scriptura* should foster eccentric theologies, particularly among those laypersons, like Asgill, who came to their Bibles without the theological training to keep them within the limits of orthodoxy. But even the scholarly elite were not immune to idiosyncratic readings of the Bible. Henry Dodwell's (1641–1711) variations on a mortalist theme were met with as much astonishment as John Asgill's, not least because he was renowned for his scholarship and learning. His unusual ideas were not restricted to eschatology alone. His defence of the uses of instrumental music in public worship to counter the influence of devils on the spinal marrow of human beings, along with his inclination to believe that the spinal marrow when decomposed became a serpent, were, to say the least, whimsical, even for his own times. His book on the mortality of the soul in 1706, *An Epistolary Discourse Proving [...] That the Soul is a Principle Naturally Mortal*, brought almost universal opprobrium upon him. The Anglican vicar of Greenwich, John Turner, was particularly severe. He likened Dodwell to a glutton with a bad digestion, who must

either vomit up what he has eaten or 'keep the undigested Load to breed filthy Humours and bad Distempers, to his own great Uneasiness and Vexation'.[51] A little unkind, perhaps! But the modern reader, like Dodwell's contemporaries, will find Dodwell's arguments difficult to swallow and his literary style difficult to digest.

He deserves his place in this discussion not least because his position on mortalism was a unique one, making it difficult to determine whether he was a soul-sleeper, a soul-denier or something else altogether. Tentatively, his complex eschatology can be reconstructed along the following lines: God created Adam out of the dust and added his *afflatus* – his breath (*pneuma*) of life – so that man became a living being. He had a natural immortality. God also added his divine breath (*pnoe*) to man. At the Fall, the *afflatus* was lost and man lost his natural immortality. But man retained the divine breath. Thus his immortality was conditional on God's continuing his breathing. This conditional immortality was confirmed at the time of baptism.

The consequence of this was that persons, made immortal by the divine breath, continued to exist immediately after death. The breath of God, declared Dodwell in a later work, 'seems to be the Principle that enables Humane Souls to subsist in Hades in their separate State'.[52] Dodwell also had a unique take on human destiny after the Day of Judgement. Those who had heard the gospel and responded to it would be raised on the Last Day and granted eternal happiness. Those who had heard it and rejected it would incur eternal punishment. This was Protestant orthodoxy. However, those who had remained ignorant of the gospel, having been rewarded or punished in the intermediate state for their merits or demerits, would be raised on the Day of Judgement only to be annihilated shortly afterwards (or perhaps not be raised at all). So the heathen, deserving neither heaven nor hell, would have the divine breath withdrawn from them because there cannot be 'any Third Eternal State suitable to the Nature of a Rational Soul'.[53] Just to confuse matters a little further, however, Dodwell did not expect that, on the Day of Judgement, there would actually be any (or many) who were ignorant of the gospel. For in a revised version of the doctrine of the harrowing of hell (which had been expunged from Protestant theologies) he suggested that all would have an opportunity in the time between death and the Last Judgement to accept or reject Christ:

> on supposition that they, who never heard of the Gospel in this Life, may have it Preached to them in Hades, and may there be admitted

> to Baptism […] This will qualifie the compliers for the Rewards of Heaven, and expose those, who shall prove Refractory, to a just Sentence of partaking in the Fire prepared for the Devil and his Angels.[54]

In his assertion of the natural mortality of the soul, Dodwell was clearly aligned with the soul-deniers. But his commitment to the intermediate state between death and the Last Judgement through his assertion of its survival by the divine breath was quite out of keeping with the mortalist tradition. He was nonetheless accused of being a soul-denier, even though he had specifically rejected the error of the Arabians (as Eusebius had called the mortalists).[55] He had done so, Dodwell later claimed, to distinguish himself from two latter-day 'Arabians', namely Henry Layton (1622–1705) and William Coward (*c.*1657–1725).

The most prolific of the English mortalists, the lawyer Henry Layton published (anonymously) some 14 pamphlets from the early 1690s until his death that, while endorsing the notion of a general resurrection of the dead, had asserted the mortality of the soul primarily on physiological grounds. Man, like plants, insects and animals, may perform 'all his natural functions', he wrote, 'by the like means of a material spirit, inspiring and acting the proper organs which God hath made apt for such purposes'.[56] He found no verse in the Bible supporting the natural immortality of the soul. Thus, on the grounds of Scripture and reason, souls literally died, although metaphorically they slept. 'Men die', he declared, 'thus they rest, and believers sleep in Jesus, till the time of the restitution of all things' when men will be restored to their former beings.[57]

Similarly, the surgeon William Coward wrote a series of works from 1702 to 1706 in which he argued for the mortality of the soul on philosophical and scriptural grounds and declared that the immortality of the soul was a legacy of the heathenish philosophy of Pythagoras, Plato and Socrates: 'the Ground only of many Absurd; and Superstitious Opinions, Abominable to the Reformed Churches and Derogatory in General to True Christianity'.[58] 'Does man die like a brute beast?' he asked. Yes, he replied,

> in respect of their End in this Life […] But then Man has thus Prerogative, or Praeeminence above a Brute, That he will be rais'd to Life again, and be made Partaker of eternal Happiness or Misery in the World to come.[59]

The resurrection of John Locke

England's greatest philosopher, John Locke (1632–1704), was the last of the major seventeenth-century supporters of mortalism and the link to its eighteenth-century proponents. In contrast to Overton, Milton, Hobbes or Muggleton, Locke nowhere said clearly that the soul slept or died between death and resurrection, and consequently his mortalism has to be read between the lines. Thus, Locke did not deny the immortality of the soul. He did, however, suggest that men could not *know* that the soul was immaterial; nor could they *know* that God might have merely joined to matter the capacity to think.

More importantly, for Locke, personal or self-consciousness was the key to personal identity regardless of whether this was embedded in body or soul. The afterlife did not depend either on the immortality of the soul or on the continuity of the body before death with the resurrection body. Thus, he argued, we can conceive that, on the Day of Resurrection, the same person would be rewarded or punished regardless of the substance with which they would be united on that day:

> The Sentence that shall be justified by the consciousness all Persons shall have, that they *themselves* in what Bodies soever they appear or what Substances soever that consciousness adheres to, are the *same* [persons] that committed those Actions, and deserve that punishment for them.[60]

This left Locke open to criticism by the orthodox from both directions – from those who believed he was denying the immortality of the soul and from those who saw him as denying the necessity of the resurrection of the *same* body as that which had died.

In ways even more complicated than they thought, both groups of critics were right. Thus, in his notebook 'Adversaria theologica' (1694) Locke argued that the Apostle Paul made no distinction between soul and body, 'material & immaterial as if one died & the other continued living[,] the one was raised & the other not[,] but he speaks of the whole man as dyeing & the whole man as raised.'[61] And he suggested that it appears that when Paul spoke of a spiritual body and an animal body, he was suggesting that 'matter is capable of animality & spirituality [of life and thought]'.[62] Little doubt, then, that Locke was here denying the immortality of the soul.

This becomes even clearer in Locke's *The Reasonableness of Christianity, as Delivered in the Scriptures* (1695). This began with a discussion of what it was that Adam had lost in the Fall, namely, the immortality with which God had conditionally created him: 'the state of Paradise was a state of Immortality, of Life without end, which he lost that very day he did eat.'[63] Loss of immortality was the consequence of Adam's sin for all those that followed. Jesus Christ rescued all humankind from this state of mortality to immortality 'which they will receive again at the Resurrection'.[64] This immortality, however, as we will see, belonged only to the righteous.

Locke's views on the Day of Resurrection were fleshed out in his 'Resurrectio et quae sequuntur' (*c.*1699). Locke was here well beyond worries about whether the dead would be raised in their *same* bodies. Out of his reading of the Scriptures, he concluded that there would be two sequential resurrections. The first (following 1 Cor. 15) would be of the righteous. These would rise in *spiritual* bodies and would be 'caught up in the clouds to meet the lord in the air'. The second resurrection would be of the wicked in physical (certainly destructible) bodies before Christ handed over the kingdom to his father. They would be cast into hellfire to be tormented. But Locke did not see them as suffering for eternity. Punishment is everlasting, he wrote, only 'as long as the subject it affects endures'.[65]

The unquenchable fire referred literally, he went on, to the fires of Gehenna outside Jerusalem, which burnt unceasingly to destroy the carcases of beasts and other filth. Yet it did not follow

> that the bodys that were burnt in it were never consumed[,] only that the worms that gnawd & the fire that burnt them was constant & never ceased till they were destroyd. Soe though the fire was not put out yet the chaff was burnt up & consumed.[66]

Locke was unsure how long the punishment of the wicked would last. However:

> that it shall be excessively terrible by its duration as well as sharpness the current of the Scripture seems to manifest, onely if one may conjecture it seems to be before our Saviours delivering up the Kingdome to his father.[67]

The triumph of soul-denying

By the end of the first decade of the eighteenth century, the intellectual space within which the mortalist debate was to be conducted from that time on was in place. The mortalism of the sixteenth century was dominated by those who, accepting the immortality of the soul, imagined the period between death and the Day of Judgement in terms of its sleep. By the end of the seventeenth century, soul-sleeping was in decline and soul-denying in the ascendant. Soul-denying mortalism, arising from the rejection of any natural immortality of the soul, was to become dominant in the eighteenth century. This was driven partly as the consequence of emerging philosophically 'materialist' views of the human that saw no necessity to embrace the existence of incorporeal entities like the soul. It was also determined by a reading of the Bible that found scriptural testimony as a whole in favour of the psycho-physical unity of the individual and against his duality. As the scientist and theologian Joseph Priestley (1733–1804) summed it up in 1782:

> [T]here is no instance, either in the Old or New Testament, of this soul being supposed to be in one place and the body in another. They are always conceived to go together, so that the perceptive and thinking power could not, in fact, be considered by the sacred writers as any other than a *property* of a living man, and therefore as what ceased of course when the man was dead, and could not be revived but with the revival of the body.[68]

Priestley and his mortalist colleagues were pretty right on this. Modern biblical interpretation would generally agree that there is no doctrine of the immortality of the soul within the New Testament.[69]

In the nineteenth century, with the resurgence of apocalypticism, mortalism found a place in those Christian groups whose intellectual roots were not in modern scientific materialism but in the Radical Reformation. As we might expect, mortalism particularly found a place among those groups that expected the imminent return of Christ, notably the Seventh-day Adventists, the Christadelphians and the Jehovah's Witnesses.[70] However, mainstream Protestant theology of the twentieth century did not endorse mortalist views. Nor was it driven by expectations of the immediacy of the Last Judgement. Nevertheless, its tendency to exalt the opposition between faith and philosophy, Scripture and reason, drove it away from the philosophical notion of the immortality of the soul. Added to that, an

emphasis on life immediately after death inclined it towards a focus on the biblical ideal of the unity of the individual and the resurrection of the *whole person* on the Day of Judgement. This is exemplified in arguably the greatest twentieth-century theologian, Karl Barth (1886–1968):

> And now the Christian man looks forward. What is the meaning of the Christian hope in this life? A life after death? An event apart from death? A tiny soul which, like a butterfly, flutters away above the grave and is still preserved somewhere, in order to live on immortally? That was how the heathen looked on the life after death. But that is not the Christian hope. 'I believe in the resurrection of the body.' Body in the Bible is quite simply man, man, moreover under the sign of sin, man laid low. And to this man it is said, Thou shalt rise again. Resurrection means not the continuation of this life, but life's completion.[71]

Ironically, the modern popular afterlife did not follow Barth or any of his Protestant colleagues in this understanding of the afterlife. As we will see in the next chapters, the modern afterlife eschewed the resurrection of the body and endorsed an ongoing life of the spirit, which, as Barth put it, did flutter away upwards like a butterfly to live on immortally.

Chapter Six

The Saved and the Damned

> There is a great Gulfe set that is by a divine decree stablished and fixed, a mans state is set for eternity, and there is no longer any hope of a change, a passage there is from death to life, but there is none hereafter; for there is a great Gulfe that God has set between, that there can be no passage, no change of a mans condition, there can be no translation.
>
> William Strong, *The Worm That Dyeth Not* (1672)

The finality of death

One of the chief attractions of mortalism was its rejection of Purgatory. The German Socinian mortalist Joachim Stegmann (1595–1633) argued that any notion of an intermediate state between death and the Day of Judgement opened the door for Catholic abuses: '[Catholics] believe in effect that the dead live […] Now this is the foundation not only of Purgatory, but also of that horrible Idolatry practised among the Papists, whilest they invocate the Saints that are dead.'[1] The Cambridge Platonist Henry More (1614–87) was no mortalist. But he was in no doubt that the rise of mortalism was due to the 'affrightful Figment of Purgatory'. The great mischief of Purgatory, he declared, is that it created a strong temptation to reject all of religion, 'or any state at all of the Soul after death, but that she is mortal and perishes'.[2]

The orthodox Protestant view on the destiny of souls between death and the Last Judgement was to tread a middle way between Purgatory on the one hand and mortalism on the other. It was a binary view of the afterlife, with heaven or hell the only two options. The delights of heaven or the horrors of hell were to be had immediately after death and before the Last Day. It endorsed both the immortality of the soul and the final resurrection of the body. The Protestant perspective was exemplified in the so-called Westminster Confession of Faith, ratified by the English

Parliament in 1648. Chapter 32, 'Of the state of men after death, and of the resurrection of the dead', reads:

> The bodies of men after death, return to the dust, and see corruption: but their souls (which neither die nor sleep) having immortal subsistence, immediately return to God who gave them: the souls of the righteous being then made perfect in holiness, are received into the highest heavens, where they behold the face of God in light and glory, waiting for the full redemption of their bodies: and the souls of the wicked are cast into hell, where they remain in torments and utter darkness, reserved for the judgement of the great day. Besides these two places, for souls separated from their bodies, the Scripture acknowledgeth none.[3]

In effect, the Last Judgement had become something of a formality. With the rejection of Purgatory, there was no longer any hope of any post-mortem mitigation of sin. As William Strong (d.1654) indicated in the passage with which this chapter began, the ultimate destiny of souls was fixed at death. No 'inward' change was possible for those suffering in hell. Indeed, not only could the damned not improve their state, the wicked actually became worse. The pains of hell, declared E[dward] W[arren] in 1667,

> would provoke the wicked to rage and swell, with anger and impatience; to fret and fume against the providence of *God*, and to curse and blaspheme the Majesty of Heaven for afflicting them; and so will sink them lower, and Chain them faster into the sulphureous Lake and flaming dungeon, rather than any way capacitate them for deliverance.[4]

The wicked, in short, were 'Unalterably confirmed and established in the Habits of sin', declared the Anglican clergyman William Lupton (1676–1726) in a sermon preached before the University of Oxford on 24 November 1706. They deserved punishment for as long as they continued so. And that, he proclaimed, 'is for ever and ever'.[5]

The Westminster Confession of Faith reflected the eschatology of John Calvin. As we noted in the last chapter, he vehemently rejected both soul-sleeping and soul-denying for a commitment to the conscious existence of the soul after death, awaiting its reunion with its body on the Last Day. As a consequence, there was a tension in Calvin's theology. On the one hand, in emphasising the conscious existence of the immortal soul after death, he

granted it the full vision of God in Christ. The dead, in Abraham's Bosom, 'enjoy God fully without weariness'.[6] There seems little to be added on the Last Day. Yet Calvin wanted also to argue that, although elect souls did enjoy the vision of God immediately after death, they did not yet do so *perfectly*. Thus, he declared,

> We are more miserable than all men if there is no Resurrection, because, although we are happy before the Resurrection, we are not happy without the Resurrection. For we say that the spirits of saints are happy in this, that they rest in the hope of a blessed Resurrection, which they could not do, were all this blessedness to perish.[7]

It is a case, perhaps, of both fulfilment and expectation. However that may be, Calvin does not underplay the significance of the Last Judgement. On that Last Day, Christ will *finally* separate the elect from the reprobate:

> And he will appear to all with the ineffable majesty of his Kingdom, with the glow of immortality, with the boundless power of divinity, with a guard of angels. From thence we are commanded to await him as our Redeemer on that day when he will separate the lambs from the goats, the elect from the reprobate. No one – living or dead – shall escape his judgement. The sound of the trumpet will be heard from the ends of the earth, and by it all will be summoned before his judgment seat, both those still alive at that day and those whom death had previously taken from the company of the living.[8]

Justified and predestined

There is yet another critical tension within the eschatology of the Magisterial Protestant Reformation of Luther and Calvin that has far more significant ramifications.[9] This tension is present within Protestant thought in particular, although it has resonated within the history of Christian thought at least since the time of Augustine. As we have seen, the Christian doctrine of the afterlife served, among other things, to redress the injustice on this side of the grave by justice on the other. Put simply, because there was no apparent connection between virtue and reward, vice and punishment, in this life, God rewarded the virtuous for their good works and punished

the vicious for theirs in the next. The *iustitia Dei* (here the 'justice of God') thus consisted in God's rewarding people for what they were entitled to as a consequence of their actions in this life. In short, men were saved or justified by their merits or works. As we noted in Chapter 4, late medieval Catholicism gave the not unwarranted impression that salvation was for sale and could be purchased for a price.

On the other hand, there had been an alternative understanding of the *iustitia Dei* within the Christian West at least since the time of Augustine. This was to the effect that salvation was not the consequence of any accumulation of merit on the part of men, but a result of God's grace. The *iustitia Dei* is the 'righteousness of God', by which he justifies sinners and imparts righteousness to them. The good works that follow, which earn salvation, are nevertheless God's, not man's. As Augustine put it:

> It follows then, dearly beloved, beyond all doubt, that as your good life is nothing else than God's grace, so also the eternal life which is the recompense of a good life is the grace of God; moreover, it is gratuitously [freely] given.[10]

Luther's concerns about salvation by works were driven in part by the abuses within the Catholic penitential system. But they were embedded in his familiarity with the Augustinian theological tradition. Luther believed that, if merit were a precondition of salvation, and if God judged on the basis of merit, all humanity was doomed, and himself before all others. 'Although I lived blamelessly as a monk,' he wrote, 'I felt that I was a sinner with an uneasy conscience before God; nor was I able to trust that I had pleased him by my satisfaction [works].'[11] And then he realised, he tells us, that the *iustitia Dei* (here the 'righteousness of God') consisted in 'that by which the righteous lives by the gift of God'.[12] Thus, the God of Christianity was not a harsh God of justice who punished the sinner *according to* his demerits, but a merciful and gracious God who bestowed righteousness upon the sinner as a free gift *in spite of* his demerits. As Alister McGrath puts it: 'the "righteousness of God" is not a righteousness which judges whether or not we have met the precondition for justification, but the righteousness which is given to us so that we may meet the precondition.'[13] Men remain sinners, but in the eyes of God, they are righteous (*simul iustus et peccator*). For Augustine, man became righteous in justification. But for Luther, man becomes, if anything, more aware of his own sinfulness. Christians, wrote Luther,

> are always aware of their sin and seek righteousness from God in accordance with his mercy. And for this very reason, they are regarded as righteous by God. Thus in their own eyes (and in reality!) they are sinners; but in the eyes of God they are righteous […] by the imputation of a merciful God.[14]

As for good works, they were no longer a cause of justification, but a consequence of it. In short, regardless of good works or ill, men were saved by God's grace. Little wonder then that the Church reacted so vehemently, for Luther had made redundant the whole paraphernalia of the penitential system of late medieval Catholicism – penances, suffrages, indulgences – and the profits generated by them.

Thus, with his doctrine of justification by grace, Luther had created a large gulf between Protestantism and Catholicism. Augustine, and the Western Catholic tradition after him, had understood 'justification' as meaning the sinner's being both declared righteous and *made* righteous (both justified and sanctified). Luther had in effect separated salvation and sanctification. In so doing, he had created a chasm between eschatology and ethics. The good works done by the justified sinner had no relevance to his salvation. Men were saved or not regardless of their deserving to be or not.

This was a chasm made even deeper by the doctrine of predestination. It was one thing to have one's eternal destiny determined during life or at death as a result of God's grace regardless of deserts, but quite another to have it predestined before birth. The consequence of Augustine's account of justification was that, since God had made some righteous and not others, God had preselected those who were to be saved, leaving others to be condemned through their own choices and actions. In short, God had predestined some for salvation, but omitted to save others. Calvin went one step further. God's grace now became above all a function of the divine sovereign will. The consequence of this was that God actively, and apparently quite arbitrarily, predestined some to salvation and *others to damnation*. 'As Scripture, then, clearly shows,' wrote Calvin,

> we say that God once established by his eternal and unchangeable plan those whom he long before determined once for all to receive into salvation, and those whom, on the other hand, he would devote to destruction. We assert that, with respect to the elect, this plan was founded upon his freely given mercy, without regard to human worth; but by his just and

> incomprehensible judgment he has barred the door of life to those whom he has given over to damnation.[15]

In marked contrast to that understanding of the *iustitia Dei* that would see God bound to judge persons according to a principle of lawfulness outside of himself (and thus according to their merits), Calvin's God was not bound by anything external to himself, for then, he believed, the Creator would be bound by his creation. On the contrary, God could do whatever he liked. And, as Calvin recognised, God's devoting to destruction whomever he pleased did appear 'more like the caprice of a tyrant than the lawful sentence of a judge'.[16] However, regardless of how it might appear to us, God's will was for Calvin so much the standard of righteousness that whatever he wills, 'by the very fact that he wills it, must be considered righteous'.[17] So it was the will of God that was the law of all laws, inscrutable as it may be to us. Moreover, since all men inherit the corruption of sin from Adam, 'we can only be odious to God, and that not from any tyrannical cruelty but by the fairest reckoning of justice,' for all are drawn from a corrupt mass.[18] From the perspective of original sin, all men deserve damnation anyway. That at least some are saved, and not all damned, is itself therefore a sign of God's infinite mercy.

Except within an understanding of the human condition as one determined by the original sin of Adam, and of a God who does what he pleases, it is hard to take this seriously. A less pessimistic view of human nature than that of either Luther or Calvin might lead to the conclusion that a God acting according to a law of justice, tempered with mercy, might find reason to grant salvation to most, if not all. Still, granted a pessimistic view, predestination did nonetheless provide a beacon of hope to those who believed that, whatever they did to the good, *they* could never merit salvation. And there is a certain comfort in fatalism, theological or otherwise. The early modern age was a melancholy one. As Robert Burton wrote in his *The Anatomy of Melancholy* in 1621, melancholy was 'a disease so frequent […] in these our daies, so often happening […] in our miserable times, as few there are that feele not the smart of it'.[19] Predestination to damnation was perhaps both cause and effect of sad times. Certainly, it provided an additional ground for deep melancholy among those who believed that, whatever *they* did to the good and regardless of their striving, they were inevitably doomed to the eternal torments of hell. The key point is that a belief in predestination could cut either way: it could increase or alleviate

anxiety. This was a conundrum through which Calvinist preachers recognised that they needed to find a way.

The Norfolk Calvinist preacher John Yates (d.1657) was one of the first Protestants to explore this problem. He recognised the danger that the doctrine of predestination held for those who were melancholic. Such people, he declared, are never able to live with their sins when the 'narrow point of reprobation and election' is 'propounded unto their melancholic braines and hearts, and most miserable polluted souls'.[20] He told of a melancholic virtuous gentlewoman, Mary Honeywood, who, doubting her salvation, fell 'into the gulfe of Gods secret counsels', seeking intellectual certainty about that which was beyond that which can be known.[21] Her minister, John Foxe (1516–87), the famous English 'historian' of the Protestant persecutions under the Catholic Queen Mary I, counselled her against going beyond the Scriptures and to trust 'assuredly that shee might conclude her salvation out of Gods word'.[22]

She went way beyond his advice and

> the temptation grew upon her, insomuch that having a *venice glasse* in her hands […] presently breakes forth into lamentable words: You have often told mee that I must seeke no further than Gods word, but I have been long without comfort, and can indure no longer; therefore if I must be saved, let this glasse be kept from breaking; and so she threw it against the walls […] yet the Lord that is rich in mercie, having stamped her with the seale of his election, was content to satisfie the languishing soule with a miracle: the glasse rebounds againe, and comes safe unto the ground.[23]

Thus can the doctrine of predestination cause harm to the melancholic soul when wrongly construed. In itself, Yates went on to say,

> it is the most strong rock of assurance, in al storms of temptations that can befall unto bodie or soule; because predestination is Gods immutable will, the cause and rule of all justice, and uttermost of all reason in his workes.[24]

On the face of it, the doctrine of double predestination was hardly an incentive to lead a life of virtue. Because salvation or damnation was an individual's lot regardless of his behaviour in this life, it mattered little how he behaved. The crucial link between morality and eschatology appeared to be irreparably severed. Thus, the possibility of moral libertinism necessitated

Calvinism reinventing the link between between ethics and eternal destiny. It did so in response to the question, 'How can I be assured that I am among the elect and not the reprobate?' This was a question at the very core of predestinarian piety.

The Puritan Stephen Denison (d.1649), minister of the church of St Katharine Cree in London, was a committed predestinarian. Election and reprobation were at the top of his theological agenda. Election, he declared, 'is the eternall and unchangeable decree of God, whereby of his free grace and favour he hath made choice of some rather then of others, to bestow upon them eternall life and happiness'. Reprobation, he continued, is also the eternal decree of God 'whereby he hath rejected others, leaving them in the fall of *Adam*, to their eternall destruction, and that to the praise of his power and justice'.[25] As a consequence, Denison supported the doctrine of limited atonement, namely, that Christ died to save only the elect, and not all persons. As for the elect, they could and would continue to sin. They must nonetheless persevere in faith. This in itself would lead them towards an assurance of their salvation. Perseverance in faith was one sign of their election. Another was good works. 'Faith must be tried by the Fruits: for faith without good works, is but a carkeise of faith […] For howsoever faith alone doth justifie the person, yet works must necessarily justifie the faith.'[26]

That said, if faith without works was dead, so too was its converse. Thus did good works need to be balanced by the cultivation of inward piety and personal godliness. This was not salvation by works, so much as the *personal conviction* of salvation through the cultivation of inward piety, the maximising of virtue, the minimising of vice and the strong conviction of the different destinies of the godly and the ungodly. As Max Weber (1864–1920) eloquently put it in his *The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism* (1905), this personal conviction 'cannot, as in Catholicism, consist in a gradual accumulation of individual good works to one's credit, but rather in a systematic self-control which at every moment stands before the inexorable alternative, chosen or damned'.[27]

Purgatory revisited

Even so, whether it was a case of salvation by grace or by works, the expectation was that the number of the damned would be far greater than the number of the elect. There were strong biblical grounds for the small

proportion that were to be saved. 'Enter through the narrow gate,' declared Jesus,

> for the gate is wide and the road is easy that leads to destruction, and there are many who take it. For the gate is narrow and the road is hard that leads to life, and there are few who find it. (Matt. 7.13–14)

'Many are called,' he said elsewhere, 'but few are chosen' (Matt. 22.14). Augustine had given this his passionate support. Thus, in a letter to a Mauretanian bishop called Optatus in 418 CE, he wrote of the reprobates who

> by an incomparable multitude outnumber those whom God has deigned to predestine as children of promise in the glory of his kingdom, in order that it might be shown, by their very multitude, that the number of those who are most justly damned, whatever it may be, is of no concern with the righteous God.[28]

This was to be the default position in both Catholicism and Protestantism.

Thus, for example, the Jesuit Jeremias Drexel (1581–1638) asserted that the 100,000 million destined for hell would be contained within a cubic German mile at the centre of the earth, where they will be closely thronged together 'like grapes in a wine-press, or salt herrings in a barrel, or bricks in a kiln […] or like sheep butcher'd in the shambles'.[29] Not to be outdone by any papist, the Copernican and Anglican Tobias Swinden (1659–1719) declared Drexel's calculation 'a poor, mean and narrow Conception both of the numbers of the Damned, and of the Dimensions of Hell'.[30] How infinitely short, he continued, 'is that Computation to those Multitudes who, as many, are set in Opposition by Christ to the few Saints, which, yet no Man can number?'[31] And one of his main reasons for transferring the location of hell from beneath the earth to the sun was that the inside of the earth could not contain the vast number of lapsed angels and the infinite number of the damned.[32] The unfortunately named Puritan Christopher Love (1618–51), in his sermon on the terrors of hell, followed geographers in dividing the world into 31 parts: 19 possessed by the doomed Jews and Turks, seven by the heathen worshipping 'stocks and stones' and similarly destined for hell, and the remainder by papists and Protestants, the former likewise damned.[33]

All this was difficult to square away with the notion of a God who had died on the cross to save mankind from sin. The German philosopher Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz (1646–1716) analysed the problem clearly in his *Theodicy* in 1709. It is a terrible judgement, he wrote,

> that God, giving his only Son for the whole human race […] yet saves so few of them and abandons all others to the devil his enemy […] And this outcome inspires all the more horror, as the sole cause why all these men are wretched to eternity is God's having exposed their parents to a temptation that he knew they would not resist; as this sin is inherent and imputed to men before their will has participated in it; as this hereditary vice impels their will to commit actual sins; and as countless men, in childhood or maturity, that have never heard or have not heard enough of Jesus Christ […] die before receiving the necessary succour for their withdrawal from this abyss of sin […] though in essence they have not been more wicked than others, and several among them have perchance been less guilty than some of that little number of elect, who were saved by a grace without reason, and who thereby enjoy an eternal felicity which they had not deserved.[34]

The Anglican theologian Matthew Horbery (1706–73) was a firm believer in the eternal torments of hell. But he saw the problem to which Leibniz was pointing. He reinterpreted the relevant New Testament texts to suggest that half would be saved and only half damned. With an awareness of the high infant-mortality rates of the time (and ignoring the doctrine of *limbus infantum*), he estimated that dead babies would constitute at least half of the population of the dead. Since, therefore, 'One half of our Species die, perhaps, before they have actually committed any Sin to deserve the Damnation of Hell […] it may reasonably be hoped that they will escape it.'[35] This was no doubt of comfort to those infants previously deprived of the Beatific Vision and doomed to an eternal limbo. Adult readers of Horbery may have felt less comforted. For Horbery's statistics suggested that although the population of heaven would be greater than that of hell, it would consist largely of babies, the majority of adults having been consigned to the infernal regions.

As we noted in Chapter 4, the doctrine of *particular* judgement, according to which the eternal destiny of individuals was irrevocably fixed at the time of death, denied the possibility of the capacity of individuals to

change their destiny. The afterlife was, as a consequence, morally static. Even Purgatory was a place where vice was purged rather than virtue acquired. But during the seventeenth century, many became dissatisfied with the fixing of the destiny of the soul at death. They opted for a morally dynamic state between death and the Last Judgement. In short, the possibilities of individual repentance, of moral and spiritual growth, and consequently of divine forgiveness and the gift of salvation, were extended beyond the grave.

An early example of the morally dynamic afterlife was provided by the seventeenth-century Platonist Henry Hallywell (1641–1703). This amounted to a Protestant rethinking of Purgatory. According to Hallywell, there were rewards for the good immediately after death, and shame and misery for the impious – no sleep of the soul here! But he was not persuaded that the Scriptures held that the good went to heaven and the wicked to hell. Rather, he suggested, on rational grounds, it would be more appropriate were all to go to an intermediate state after death until the Day of Resurrection. He carefully distinguished this state from Purgatory, primarily because, whereas Purgatory was penitential, his intermediate state was purificatory and morally dynamic. 'By this middle State,' he wrote,

> I mean no such condition of Being, as that wherein a man from his impious transactions in this life, shall undergo very sharp and acute torments, the protraction or abbreviation of which yet, depend upon the will and pleasure of his Holiness [the pope] and mercenary priests; and after such a time of penance and purgation, be delivered, and translated into Heaven: but, such a state, wherein, by a due purification of their minds, and subjugation of those stubborn lusts and desires which exalt themselves against the life of God, and which were not thoroughly tamed in this life, the Soul of man becomes wholly dead to every inordinate affection, and daily kindles that fire of Divine Love, till at last it arise to a perfect flame.[36]

In particular Hallywell found it unsatisfactory that 'the infinitely far greater part of men are damned'.[37] And, as a Platonist, he found it inconsistent with the goodness of God to allow the majority to be born into circumstances where there would be little hope of recovering the lost image of God in their souls, with everlasting damnation the inevitable outcome. Consequently, free will was extended beyond the grave and time allotted for

moral improvement: '[S]urely it would be a great eye-sore and blemish in Heavens righteous Oeconomy and dispensation in the World, if there were really no time or means allowed for the recovery of these lapsed Souls.'[38]

Hallywell's doctrine of a morally dynamic afterlife opened up the possibility of salvation not only for those who had heard the gospel and responded appropriately or otherwise, but also for those who had lived in ignorance of it. This then was a revised Protestant version of the doctrine of the harrowing of hell (or Hades) for those who had lived *after* Christ rather than *before*. To be sure, this did not imply that all would ultimately be saved. And Hallywell did not deny the possibility of eternal torments after the Day of Resurrection. But he did make it possible that all *could* be saved, and through *their own commitment to moral improvement*.

The belief that in getting rid of the doctrine of Purgatory, the Protestant Reformation might have lost more than it gained, was also held by Archibald Campbell, Anglican bishop of Aberdeen from 1721–44. That the majority were damned was a doctrine he abominated and abhorred as 'Cruel, as Barbarous, as Unbecoming the Infinite Goodness, Love, and Mercy of God'.[39] His account of the state of souls after death was especially reminiscent of Augustine's. At death, he believed, souls proceeded to Hades, where they remained until the Last Day. Hades was divided into two sides with a series of mansions within each – one on the right for righteous souls that would ultimately attain to the Beatific Vision, the other on the left for the wicked who would proceed to hell. For those on the right, progress from mansion to mansion was possible, through a process of purgation, purification and moral improvement.

This idea of a morally dynamic afterlife was an innovation in the history of Christian thought that was to reach its fulfilment in the German philosopher Immanuel Kant (1724–1804). Kant argued that, although we are imperfect human beings, we rationally aspire for perfection. It was obvious to Kant, as to everyone, that moral perfection was unattainable in this life. Thus, he argued in his *Critique of Practical Reason* (1788) that it was reasonable to postulate an infinitely enduring existence immediately after death and before the Last Judgement in which the individual 'may hope for a further uninterrupted continuance of this progress, however long his existence may last, even beyond this life'.[40] Thus may the soul progress endlessly towards God, who is the highest good. That the soul may progress after death entails that it could do so. Thus, the soul had to be free, both on this side of the grave and on the other, to progress in virtue. In the afterlife, God imparted

happiness as the result of virtue. In a version of Luther turned upside down, perhaps inspired by Kant's own grounding in Lutheran Pietism, Kant's salvation was by works. Grace (the gift of happiness) did not precede works as in Luther but, rather, grace followed the acquisition of afterlife virtue.

That said, moral progress in the afterlife was not for eternity. It was dependent on time. After the Day of Judgement, declared Kant, there would be no more time. Our eternal destiny – salvation or damnation – would be fixed on that day according to our merits or otherwise. The Last Day, declared Kant in *The End of All Things* (1794),

> is a *Judgement Day*: the decision of the World-Judge in favour of salvation or damnation is, therefore, the proper end of all things in time and the beginning of (blissful or miserable) eternity in which the fate that has fallen to each man endures as it was allotted to him in the moment of its pronouncement [by God].[41]

Hell's torments

It would seem, then, that Kant (perhaps to the surprise of his modern devotees), like Hallywell and Campbell, was convinced that there were those who, whatever the opportunities that there may have been for progress between death and the Last Day, would be inevitably damned to an eternal hell after it. In believing in the possibility of moral progress after death, they were in the minority, but in accepting that, after the Last Judgement, the damned had no further chance for salvation, they were still among the majority in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

At the beginning of the eighteenth century, the Presbyterian John Shower (1657–1715) was not alone in endorsing both the eternal and the extreme nature of hell's torments, even when compared to the familiar horrors of everyday life in the here and now (see Plate 24 [c]). 'We have heard,' he wrote,

> of some who have endured breaking on the Wheel, ripping up of their Bowels, fleaing alive, racking of Joynts, burning of Flesh, pounding in a Mortar, tearing in pieces with Flesh-hooks, boyling in Oyl, roasting on hot fiery Gridirons, etc. And yet all these, tho' you should superad thereto all Diseases, such as the Plague, Stone, Gout, Strangury, or whatever you can name most torturing to the Body […] they would all come short […] of

> that Wrath, that Horror, that unconceivable Anguish which the Damned must inevitably suffer every Moment, without any Intermission of their Pains, in Hellish Flames.[42]

While the major part of Richard Baxter's (1615–91) *The Saints' Everlasting Rest* was an exposition of the rewards of the godly, the sufferings of the wicked were not neglected. Baxter's hell was a world of social reversal, a Puritan's revenge for what he saw as the sins of the social elite. The rich man in hell would not be a gorgeous, well-dressed gallant. There would be no powdering or curling of the hair, nor expectations of admiring glances. The good times were no more – no cards, dice, hunting, dancing, theatre or drinking. There would be neither lascivious discourse, amorous songs, nor wanton dalliance. God would laugh at the sufferings of the damned:

> Is it not a terrible thing to a wretched soul, when it shall lie roaring perpetually […] in the flames of Hell, and the God of mercy himself shall laugh at them? […] When none in Heaven or earth can help them but God, & he shall rejoyce over them in their calamity?[43]

Baxter's God was an executioner, insensible to mercy, the avenger of sweet-smelling voluptuousness, of hedonistic delights. So was Christopher Love's:

> When thou art scorching in thy flames, when thou art howling in thy torments, then shall God laugh at thy destruction, and then the Saints of God shall sing and rejoice, that thou art a vessel of justice, and so his power and wrath are made known in thee.[44]

On the one hand, the sufferings of hell were magnifications of the pains of illness and disease with which readers of Christopher Love were all too personally familiar. There is no disease, declared Christopher Love, that puts the 'whole body in pain at once: but in hell it is not so, in hell all the parts of your bodies, and powers of your souls shall be tormented.'[45] To Richard Stafford (1663–1703), all the evils, pains, fears, diseases and afflictions throughout the whole earth 'do not make up the ten thousandth part so bad as the Damnation of Hell'.[46]

On the other hand, hell's torments were also exaggerations of the sufferings of criminals. The penal system of the damned in the next world was

a projection into the hereafter of criminal punishments in this one. Sadism and piety combined; and the heavenly judge was an omnipotent replica of an earthly judge. So for Richard Baxter, as for his contemporaries, the purpose of punishments for those convicted of crime was retributive, and the deliberate infliction of pain in a public place was crucial; so too were the punishments in hell. Moreover, the terrors of hell were multiplied for Baxter by the shrieks and cries of one's companions, by children crying out against their parents, husbands against wives and wives against husbands, masters and servants, ministers and people, magistrates and subjects, all cursing each other into the infinite future.

The message for progressing pilgrims from John Bunyan (1628–88) was just as clear: progress or else. The worst tortures imaginable on this earth, maintained Bunyan, were as fleabites compared to the sufferings of those in hellfire: 'I will give you the scope of them in a similitude,' he wrote:

> Set case you should take a man, and tie him to a stake, and with red hot Pincers pinch off his flesh by little pieces for two or three years together, and at last, when the poor man cryes out for ease and help, the tormentors answer, Nay but besides all this you must be handled worse. We will serve you thus these 20 years together, and after that we will fill your mangled body full of scalding lead, and run you through with a red hot spit, would this not be lamentable? […] But he that goes to hell shall suffer ten thousand times worse torments then these, and yet shall never be quite dead under them.[47]

The horrors of this eternal cacophony of misery and blame were augmented by the screams of demons. In this present world, suggested Bunyan, the very thought of demons appearing was sufficient to make the flesh tremble and the hair stand up on end. Even worse there! The spirits of the wicked would be daunted by hobgoblin and foul fiend. What will you do, he asked,

> when not onely the supposition of the devils appearing, but the reall society of all the devils in hell to be with thee howling and roaring, screeching and yelling in such a hideous manner, that thou wilt be even at thy wits end, and be ready to run starke madde again for anguish and torment?[48]

The demons in hell were both tormenting and tormented. According to the Platonist Henry More, wicked souls would be exposed to these grim and

remorseless officers of justice, as devoid of any sense of good as those that they would punish. These demons, he wrote, 'satiate their lascivient cruelty with all manner of abuses and torments they can imagine'.[49] However, these demons would themselves be tortured in ways far above 'what the cruellest Tyranny has inflicted here, either upon the guilty or innocent'.[50] The punishments that were inflicted by the demons of hell upon the damned were at God's behest. They were God's torturers manifesting his glory and justice. In both Catholic and Protestant demonology, evil spirits had only as much power as God allowed them to exercise. God could not be excused the malevolence of demons, and he was ultimately responsible for the activities of evil spirits on each side of the grave. Let no man imagine, declared the Calvinist Thomas Goodwin (1600–80),

> that Devils are the greatest Tormenters of Men, or of their Consciences in Hell: or if any would affirm it, I would demand, Who it is that torments the Consciences of Devils themselves? Certainly none but God […] And it is as sure, that the same God, with whom those Spirits and their Consciences have for ever to do, the Consciences of Men shall also.[51]

From the end of the seventeenth century, at least among a literate elite, hell's population became significantly depleted. References to demons and devils, their presence in hell and their tormenting of the damned disappeared from the literature. The role that the Devil and his minions played in the everyday world went into a similar decline. The baroque fantasy of satanic compacts, of witches' sabbaths and Devil worship, began to lose its purchase in the mental furniture of the cultivated European mind. The philosophical naturalism of the new science banished demons from the natural world. The progressive assumption of an orderly regular universe made untenable the capricious interventions of demons. Without demons, God alone became responsible for the torments of the damned – both judge and torturer.[52] This was to put even more pressure on the doctrine of eternal torments.

Gnawing worms, unquenchable fires and abominable fantasies

A variety of biblical images served to emphasise hell's horrors. It was a bottomless pit of darkness, utter darkness, a furnace of fire, a lake that

burnt with fire and brimstone, a dark and tormenting prison, the blackness of darkness, chains of darkness. All were agreed that the wicked would be punished by fire. But there was some debate about the nature of hellfire. While the case could be made that a 'corporeal' fire would not work on spirits, most held to the view that the flames of hell were real, although even then bets were hedged. The Anglican John Brandon (b.1644/5) supposed 'the Fire that shall torment the Bodies of the wicked to be real and corporal fire, as ours is, I mean as real, though perhaps not of the same kind'.[53] In 1670, the Nonconformist Thomas Vincent (1634–78) clearly had the 1666 Great Fire of London in his mind when he suggested that, although corporeal, the dark, irresistible, unquenchable, everlasting fires of hell would far exceed any earthly fires, which would be like the biting of a flea or a pinprick by comparison. The wicked would see 'themselves on fire, Head, Back, Breast, Belly, Hands, Arms, Legs, Feet, every part on fire, and that such a fire though it doth torment them, yet that shall not be able to consume them'.[54]

Paradoxically, in spite of its fires, the major characteristic of hell was its gloominess. The darkness of hell served to emphasise its penal quality – its dungeon-like nature and demonic ambience. The torments of hell were increased by the absence of any consolatory light. The greatest part of the dead, claimed Bishop William Beveridge (1637–1708) in a sermon before Queen Mary in 1690, 'live with the Fiends of Hell in the infernal pit, where they have no light, nothing but darkness and horrour to the utmost extremity roundabout them'.[55]

Even the fires of hell gave out no light. The natural order was overturned. While the righteous enjoyed light without heat, the damned suffered heat without light. John Milton's description of hell in *Paradise Lost* as

> A Dungeon horrible, on all sides round
> As one great Furnace flam'd, yet from those flames
> No light, but rather darkness visible
> Serv'd onely to discover sights of woe

stood in a tradition developed by the early Church Fathers, utilised by medieval Catholic philosophers and articulated by Geoffrey Chaucer.[56] Still, although the flames of hell would give no light, visions of horror would remain: 'The fire it self will give no light,' wrote Thomas Vincent (1634–78),

> all will be dark and black, black Devils, black bodies, black Souls, and they may without light have perceivance one of another, as Devils have now unto whom light is no use; or if there be a duskish light there, to represent one anothers ruful countenances, and other fright-ful spectacles, be sure there will be no refreshing light, there the damned will be in a place and state of darkness forever.[57]

However, in the midst of all this doom and gloom, there was one bright spot, namely that the torments of the damned would be proportionate to their sins. The proportionality of punishment and sin was inherited by Protestantism from the medieval consensus. As we noted in Chapter 4, the doctrine of Purgatory assumed such a proportionality, although one which took into account both the quality and the period of suffering. That the torments of hell were graded was endorsed by the councils of Lyons in 1274 and Florence in 1439. Dante had intricately depicted the grading of both rewards and punishments in the heavenly and infernal realms. Neither Luther nor Calvin, in spite of their belief that works played no role in the hereafter, rejected the gradation of both heavenly joys and hellish pains.[58] No doubt it was more difficult to assert gradations of happiness in heaven than misery in hell. After all, the Beatific Vision *is* the Beatific Vision and the same for all. Still, there was a strong inclination among the majority of Protestant commentators to maintain a symmetry of contrasts between heaven and hell, and thus to endorse the gradation of rewards as well as punishments. Divine justice was thus served in the allocation of both joy and suffering.

The question of degrees of suffering in hell was also intimately connected to the distinction that we made in Chapter 3 between the pain of loss (*poena damni*) and the pain of sense (*poena sensus*). The former was the punishment that consisted in deprivation of the Beatific Vision and the sense of grief, loss and anguish that was its consequence; the latter was the physical punishments primarily inflicted by fire. It was a distinction familiar to John Milton: '[T]he second death, or the punishment of the damned,' he declared, 'seems to consist partly in the loss of the chief good, namely, the favor and protection of God, and the beatific vision of his presence […] and partly in eternal torment, which is called the punishment of sense.'[59] The scriptural grounds for this distinction were found in Mark 9.48 and Isaiah 66.24: 'And they shall go out and look at the dead bodies of those who have rebelled against me; for their

worm shall not die, their fire shall not be quenched, and they shall be an abhorrence to all flesh.'

The debate around the meaning of the 'worm' and the 'fire' had been around since well before the time of Augustine. He had outlined all the possible options for both physical and spiritual readings of these in *De civitate dei*.[60] The same possibilities were still in play in the period of the Reformation over a thousand years later. The popular early modern belief that worms spontaneously generated from putrefying flesh revived the direct impetus for the literal role of worms in hell. The same belief could also be read figuratively as the putrefaction of the wicked soul. Thus, for example, in his posthumously published *The Worm That Dyeth Not* (1672), the independent divine William Strong (d.1672) declared the conscience to be the worm that ever gnaws. It is no wonder, he wrote, if the conscience 'breed a worm as all other putrefactions do; and thus being the worst, it is not strange if it breed the worst and the most devouring Worm.'[61] The fire of hell, on the other hand, was seldom interpreted figuratively. Among the early Church Fathers, only a few, among whom was Origen, interpreted the fires of hell as equivalent to remorse, regret and so on.

The sufferings of the damned in hell were also increased by their ability to see the happiness of the blessed in heaven. The biblical justification for this was again the story of the rich man and Lazarus the beggar. The rich man in hell (Hades) 'looked up and saw Abraham far away with Lazarus by his side' (Luke 16.23). On the basis of this text, John Bunyan saw the torments of hell increased by the sight of friends, neighbours, acquaintances, even one's father, mother, wife, husband, children, brothers and sisters, all enjoying bliss. He rejoiced that

> There shall come from the East and from the West, that is, those that thou didst never see in thy life before, and they shall sit down with thy friends, and thy neighbours, thy wife and thy children in the kingdom of heaven, and thou for thy sins and disobedience shalt be shut out, nay, thrust out. O wonderful torment.[62]

In the contrasting symmetries of heaven and hell, just as the sufferings of the damned were increased by the vision of the joys of the saved, so also the joys of the righteous were heightened by the sight across the great divide of the punishments of the wicked. This 'abominable fancy', as F. W. Farrar called it, was a reversal of the story of the rich man and Lazarus.[63]

It had a long history in the Christian tradition. It was supported by both Tertullian and Augustine. Thomas Aquinas too endorsed it: 'Wherefore in order that the happiness of the saints may be more delightful to them and that they may render more copious thanks to God for it, they are allowed to see perfectly the sufferings of the damned.'[64] America's most famous eighteenth-century Calvinist theologian, Jonathan Edwards (1703–58), passionately championed it in his 1741 sermon:

> The sight of hell torments will exalt the happiness of the saints for ever. It will not only make them more sensible of the greatness and freeness of the grace of God in their happiness; but it will really make their happiness the greater, as it will make them more sensible of their own happiness; it will give them a more lively relish of it; it will make them prize it more. When they see others, who were of the same nature, and born under the same circumstances, plunged in such misery, and they so distinguished, O it will make them sensible how happy they are. A sense of the opposite misery, in all cases, greatly increases the relish of any joy or pleasure.[65]

Still, by the time of Edwards in the first half of the eighteenth century, references to the 'abominable fancy' were few and far between. By the middle of the nineteenth century, it had virtually disappeared from the Protestant tradition. The reasons for its doing so are less clear. Most likely, its decline reflected the beginnings of a change in attitude to the sufferings of others more generally. From the end of the seventeenth until the middle of the nineteenth century, an originally positive attitude to the suffering of others in the here and now was slowly being replaced by a rising sensitivity. As Pieter Spierenburg argues: 'The death and suffering of fellow human beings were increasingly experienced as painful, just because other people were increasingly perceived as fellow human beings.'[66] This change of sensitivity was crucial to the demise of the public spectacle of suffering. Just as this changing sensibility led to the removal of the punishments of the judicially guilty from the earthly public gaze, so, it can be argued, it removed the sufferings of the damned from the sight of the heavenly citizenry. The liberal Protestant theologian Friedrich Schleiermacher (1768–1834) reflected this shift in attitudes to the suffering of others in his rejection of the abominable fancy. Schleiermacher's was a new sensitivity. In marked contrast to the traditional view, he believed that the blessedness of the saved would not be enhanced but severely disturbed by their knowledge of the sufferings

of the damned, even when their punishments were just. Eternal bliss, he suggested, cannot include such a diminution. For eternal bliss genuinely to exist, he suggested, eternal damnation cannot.[67]

Similarly, during the same period, there is a diminution in the theological acceptability of the physical punishments of the damned. By the middle of the nineteenth century, the notion of *poena sensus* was under serious attack. Much more acceptable was the belief that the damned would suffer *only* from the loss of heaven and be *only* excluded from fellowship with God. To the liberal Anglican F. D. Maurice (1805–72), for example, the mere thought of the loss of God was sufficiently daunting: '[T]he thought of His ceasing to punish them, of His letting them alone, of His leaving them to themselves, is the real unutterable horror.'[68] Hell had now become the absence of God. The prisoners of hell were there incarcerated no longer *for* punishment but *as* punishment. But whether suffering the punishment of loss or the punishment of sense, there was a further issue upon which attention came to be focused. Would these punishments last forever?

Annihilationists and torments temporary

As much as the torments of hell themselves, it was the emphasis on the eternity of them that was intended to provoke horror, effect repentance and act as an incentive to a good and holy life in the here and now. However, unlike the punishment of criminals in this life at the end of which death often mercifully occurred, the awesome ceremonies of hell went on forever. It was 'the eternity of the Punishment', declared the Anglican divine Matthew Horbery, 'which gives its chief weight and Edge, and makes it pierce deepest into the Hearts of Sinners'.[69] Within the Christian tradition, that the punishments of the damned in hell would be eternal had always been the majority opinion. But from the latter part of the seventeenth and into the eighteenth century, there was a small number by whom it was privately disbelieved, publicly although discreetly questioned, or anonymously challenged. This was done in the name of the conviction that all the damned would be eventually either annihilated or saved after an appropriate period of punishment.

Scripture was the predominant focus of discussions both for and against the eternity of hell. In particular, the debate turned on whether the term 'eternal' (αἰώνιος) in the New Testament meant what it suggested or

merely 'of a long duration'. The symmetry of 'eternal happiness' and 'eternal misery' was central. Horbery asked the obvious question of the terms for 'eternal':

> When apply'd to God, they confessedly denote a proper Eternity: when apply'd to the Happiness of the Saints in Heaven, they have hitherto universally been thought to denote the same [...] What Reason then is there why they should not denote the same, when apply'd to the Punishments of the Wicked?[70]

Be that as it may, both annihilationists and universalists nonetheless mined Scripture for support for their respective positions.

Such was the diversity of opinion on the eternity of hell's torments that could be generated by appeal to Scripture that, on occasion, reason was invoked against it. Thus, the English theologian Thomas Burnet (*c.*1635–1715) argued that, granting the ambiguities within the debate,

> every Man is at Liberty to embrace that Opinion which his Conscience shall pronounce to be most agreeable to sound reason; and let him adhere to that Interpretation of the Sacred Scripture upon this Point which the weighty Reasons of the Cause before us will be best able to bear.[71]

It would be simplistic to suggest that the debate over eternal torments in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries simply reflected a dispute between reason and the Bible. 'Reason over Scripture' was certainly a manifesto for those who perceived themselves progressive and enlightened in contrast to the hidebound traditionalists who supported the eternal punishment of the wicked. For these, 'reason' implied not so much the power of the human mind to arrive independently at truth as a commitment to avoid intolerance, bigotry and extremism. But opponents and advocates of eternal torments alike provided rational arguments that orbited within a biblical space. At the same time, the meaning of the Bible was itself determined within the context of debates about the nature of God. These went particularly to the relationship between the divine attributes of mercy, wrath and justice, and the implications of these for the destiny of the damned.

The wrath of God was for some sufficient reason to punish the wicked eternally. The Calvinist Thomas Goodwin wrote his discourse on the punishment of sin in hell in 1680, as the subtitle indicates, to demonstrate 'the

Wrath of God to be the immediate Cause Thereof'. Eternal punishment, he exclaimed, is 'an act of avenging Wrath'.[72] Jonathan Edwards's sinners were 'in the hands of an angry God'.[73] For Goodwin and Edwards, as for many others, vengeance and retributive justice were closely combined. The doctrine of eternal torments retained a medieval element of the law of vengeance together with an early modern sense of retributive justice. The wicked, proclaimed Jonathan Edwards,

> *deserve* to be cast into hell, so that divine justice never stands in the way, it makes no objection against God's using his power at any moment to destroy them. Yea, on the contrary, justice calls aloud for an infinite punishment of their sins.[74]

It was difficult to integrate the concept of eternal retribution with God's goodness and mercy. The deist Matthew Tindal (1657–1733) in his *Christianity as Old as the Creation* (1731), for example, lamented those who impute such actions to God 'as [to] make him, resemble the worst of beings, & so run into downright Demonism'.[75] As a consequence of this kind of critique, those who argued for eternal torments were forced to reinterpret the goodness and mercy of God accordingly. With the Catholic Francis Blyth (*c.*1705–72), it is difficult to distinguish his rhetorical assertion of the mercy of God from what is in effect a denial of it. For Blyth, the mercy of God can only be understood from the primacy of his retributive justice:

> It is unmerciful, you say, for God to give sinners their desert; is it mercy then for worms, for wretches, to rob God of his due? And must God be more merciful than becomes him as God to be, merely to prove him less just than he really is, and must be?[76]

The implication that, in the light of the eternal torments imposed by God, divine mercy was not up to much, could be mitigated by arguing that the penalties for sins were something that followed naturally and inevitably upon the sinner – self-inflicted wounds rather than externally imposed tortures. They were, after all, the consequence of the misuse of free will. But arguments of this sort did little to solve the issue of God's lack of mercy. As D. P. Walker has pointed out, although a God who allows punishments to happen is less cruel than one who actively imposes them, 'there is little if any moral difference between allowing the occurrence of a disaster together

with the resultant suffering, which you could prevent, and actively causing the disaster and the suffering.'[77]

William Whiston (1667–1752) would have agreed. He was Isaac Newton's successor as Lucasian Professor of Mathematics at the University of Cambridge. To Whiston, the doctrine of the love of God was absolutely inconsistent with those 'common but barbarous and savage opinions' of eternal torments,

> as if much the greatest part of mankind are under a state of reprobation, unalterable reprobation, and must inevitably be damned: and that such their damnation is to be *coeternal* with the duration of their Creator himself; and that the torments, the exquisite torments of these most numerous and most miserable creatures, are determined without the least pity, or relenting, or bowels of compassion in their Creator, to be in the flames of Hell; without abatement, or remission, for endless ages of ages. And all this for the sins of this short life; fallen into generally by the secret snares of the Devil, and other violent temptations; which they commonly could not wholly either prevent, or avoid; and this without any other advantage to themselves or to others, or to God himself, than as instances […] of the absolute and supreme power and dominion of the cruel and inexorable author of their being; for all the infinite ages of eternity.[78]

For his part, Whiston was, at the end of the Last Day, an annihilationist. When he was a student at Cambridge from 1686 to 1691, Whiston was a supporter of eternal torments. But by 1709, perhaps under the influence of the philosopher John Locke, he had changed his mind. A temporary period of punishment followed by annihilation, he suggested, reflected both the divine (retributive) justice and goodness. The punishments were eternal, he maintained, only in the sense that they would 'continue the whole Duration of the Wicked, who are the subjects of it'.[79]

According to Whiston, before the Last Judgement, the wicked would be confined beneath the earth. The Astronomer Royal Edmund Halley's and his own researches demonstrated, he claimed, a large cavity between the internal and external parts of the earth, thus vindicating the biblical and traditional descriptions of Hades being beneath the earth. During this period the wicked would be confined there with the opportunity for repentance. The majority would grab that last chance. Taking a leaf

out of Origen's book, Whiston even hoped that Satan and his evil angels might eventually choose to repent and be saved. The incorrigibly wicked, however, would be resurrected on the Last Day with physical bodies that would be punished in flames (fire), and with the same diseases they had at death (worms). Moreover, he surmised, they would then be located on a comet (like Halley's):

> I cannot but think the Surface or Atmosphere of such a Comet to be that Place of Torment so terribly described in Scripture, into which the Devil and his Angels, with wicked Men their Companions, when delivered out of their Prison in the Heart of the Earth, shall be cast for their utter Perdition or second Death; which will be indeed a terrible but a most useful spectacle to God's rational creatures.[80]

The period of time that the wicked would spend in this hellish comet would be proportionate to their sins, to be followed by their second death – annihilation.

Whiston's belief that the wicked would have a 'second death' after an appropriate time of punishment in hell, although without his geology and cometology, remained the standard pattern for theologically driven annihilationist views from this time on. The most significant variations on this theme occurred only in the second half of the nineteenth century among those who were influenced by the Darwinian challenge to the Christian idea of man as unique in the animal world by virtue of his immortal soul. Darwinism served to reinforce the assumption implicit within annihilationism that the soul was not naturally immortal, that immortality was a consequence of divine grace and that man was naturally mortal.[81] The Darwinist notion of the survival of the fittest also served to align the annihilationists' account of the afterlife with the belief that those not fit for salvation would, like many species, just disappear. Thus, for example, the Anglican evangelical Henry Constable (1816–91), in his highly successful *The Duration and Nature of Future Punishment* (1868), declared,

> We find in nature that death and destruction are God's usual agents in removing from their place things animate and inanimate as soon as they cease to discharge the part for which they were intended […] Whole races of living things have long ceased to exist […] Lower creatures know not God, and fade away out of life. Higher intelligences knew Him, turned

> from Him, made themselves like beasts, and like beasts are treated. Hell will add its fossil remains to those of the quarries of the earth.[82]

Universalists and torments reformative

Advocates of both annihilationism and universalism no doubt comforted themselves with the thought that, even if God's justice was manifested in the punishments the wicked endured in hell, his mercy was demonstrated in the torments of hell being only temporary and not eternal. For universalists, however, in contrast to annihilationists, the end of punishments brought salvation rather than destruction, if only after a period of punishments intended to reform the sinner. Within the history of Christian thought, universalism was a minor tradition, generally viewed with suspicion. Since it was often believed that universal salvation would act as a disincentive to the virtuous life among the hoi polloi, some held it to be a secret doctrine for the few, an esoteric truth not to be revealed to the masses to whom the eternity of hell's torments still needed to be preached. Predominantly embedded in the Platonic tradition of the early Church, particularly with Origen, it re-emerged among some of the Platonists in the seventeenth century (Peter Sterry, George Rust and Jeremiah White), and among supporters of the Radical Reformation (John Denck, Gerrard Winstanley and Richard Coppin).[83] It was during the nineteenth century, however, that it became a matter of mainstream controversy.

The nineteenth-century German liberal Protestant theologian Friedrich Schleiermacher was the first modern major theologian to accept universalism. In his case, it was intriguingly combined with a commitment to predestination and, as we noted above, a rejection of eternal damnation. God did not predestine some to salvation and others (the vast majority) to eternal misery. Rather, he foreordained the salvation of all humanity. In contrast to the view that some obtained the highest bliss while others were lost in irrevocable misery, Schleiermacher proclaimed, we ought to admit 'the equal rights of the milder view […] that through the power of redemption there will one day be a universal restoration of all souls'.[84]

Schleiermacher's liberal view on salvation was to have little impact on nineteenth-century German theology. In England, by contrast, controversy about universalism was a constant feature of the theological landscape of the second half of that century. We can take the Broad Church Anglican cleric

F. W. Farrar's collection of sermons entitled *Eternal Hope* (1878) and the arguments it generated as emblematic of the debate around universalism in the mid-Victorian period.[85] It was the third of these sermons, 'Hell – what it is not', that was to provoke the most controversy, not least because Farrar had the virtue of being able not only to preach *to* but to write *for* a large crowd.

Farrar was vehemently opposed to the doctrine of eternal punishment. 'I know nothing,' he declared,

> more calculated to make the soul revolt with loathing from every doctrine of religion than the evil complacency with which some cheerfully accept the belief that they are living and moving in the midst of millions doomed irreversibly to everlasting perdition.[86]

He deemed it a doctrine of 'judicial terrorism', 'a blasphemy against God's exceeding and eternal love'.[87] And of the biblical texts that appeared to endorse it:

> I protest at once and finally against this ignorant tyranny of isolated texts which has ever been the curse of Christian truth, the glory of narrow intellects, and the cause of the worst errors of the worst days of the corrupted Church […] The devil, as we know, can quote texts for his own purpose.[88]

The words 'hell', 'everlasting' and 'damnation' should be expunged, he declared, from all English Bibles as mistranslations.

It is also clear that, along with eternal torments, Farrar rejected annihilationism. This, on the face of it, would leave universalism as the only remaining option. Yet, he wrote, 'I cannot preach the certainty of Universalism.' There were, no doubt, practical and theoretical grounds for this uncertainty. Practically, Farrar wished to avoid accusations of teaching an unorthodox doctrine. Theoretically, he was agnostic not only about universalism but also about all the options for those who did not merit eternal life at the time of death. God has given us 'no *clear and decisive* revelation on the final condition of those who have died in sin'.[89]

Nevertheless, he did go on to sail very close to the winds of heresy. He had no doubt that the will of God was that all would eventually be saved. He believed that there would be a period of time after death when man would continue in that spiritual death that is alienation from God,

although how long that might be – 'that is one of the secret things which God hath not revealed.'[90] Without asserting that *all* would be saved, he did express the hope that the vast majority of the lost would be eventually redeemed. And he strongly hinted that there would be a period of time when those who were not yet ready for salvation 'may have to be purified in that Gehenna of aeonian fire beyond the grave.'[91] This was Purgatory in all but name.

However much he may have tried to avoid endorsing universalism, there were many who believed that he had done precisely that. The debate among the theological elite focused on

> the appeal to a fixed, revealed doctrine on the one hand, and the protest against its morally intolerable nature on the other; a fear of giving licence to sin on the one hand, and a fear of making it impossible for men to believe in a good God on the other; the pitting of text against text, and authority against authority.[92]

Still, however troubled the theological intelligentsia may have been, Farrar received a more sympathetic response among the general public. Thus, for example, a lady from Cornwall wrote to Farrar to tell him that his book had been

> the means of saving from Atheism a young and thoughtful man – a carpenter in our village. Brought up strictly in the narrow views of the United Free Methodists his danger was, from feeling the terrible inconsistency of the hell preached by them with the doctrine that God *is* love. I lent him *Eternal Hope*, which he has since told me saved him when on the verge of Atheism.[93]

For some Victorians, at least, the doctrine of the eternal punishments of the damned in hell was a sufficient cause for disbelief. Atheism was now a serious option for the ethically virtuous. The doctrine of an eternal hell was leading not only to a theological refining of belief but also to a wholesale rejection of it. Farrar, like a number of others, was driven by a Victorian moral seriousness that was rebelling against some parts of Christian orthodoxy. God was decidedly looking ethically a little bit out of touch. As early as 1825, the poet Samuel Taylor Coleridge (1772–1834) had analysed the theological disquiet among his acquaintances:

> I have found the far larger number of serious and inquiring persons little, if at all, disquieted by doubts respecting Articles of Faith, that are simply above their comprehension. It is only where the belief required of them jars with their *moral* feelings; where a doctrine in the sense, in which they have been taught to receive it, appears to contradict their clear notions of right and wrong, or to be at variance with the divine attributes of goodness and justice; that these men are surprised, perplexed, and alas! not seldom offended and alienated. Such are the Doctrines of Arbitrary Election and Reprobation; the Sentence to everlasting Torment by an eternal and necessitating decree; vicarious Atonement, and the necessity of the Abasement, Agony and ignominious Death of a most holy and meritorious Person, to appease the wrath of God.[94]

Thus, the doctrine of eternal punishment in hell had become morally repugnant to many both inside and outside the Church, As Don Cupitt puts it:

> The Victorians thought it a moral duty to believe that no one was quite beyond redemption; they did not like the doctrine of Reprobation [predestination to damnation], and if a Broad Church clergyman questioned the doctrine of eternal punishment he might […] be reviled by the theologians, but he was sure of the sympathy of a large public of liberal-minded laymen.[95]

Almost at the end of the nineteenth century, the British statesman William Gladstone (1809–98) commented that the doctrine of hell had been 'relegated […] to the far-off corners of the Christian mind […] there to sleep in deep shadow as a thing needless in our enlightened and progressive age'.[96] This was an exaggeration. The doctrine of hell remained the orthodoxy within Christianity and that of the eternal torments of the damned in hell continued within both conservative evangelical Protestantism and conservative Roman Catholicism, then as now. Thus, for example, in Thomas Hardy's (1840–1928) novel *Tess of the d'Urbervilles* (1891), the heroine Tess worries about the destiny of her unbaptised and illegitimate baby Sorrow, whom she realises is close to death:

> The clock struck the solemn hour of one, that hour when fancy stalks outside reason, and malignant possibilities stand rock-firm as facts. She thought of the child consigned to the nethermost corner of hell, as its

> double doom for lack of baptism and lack of legitimacy; saw the archfiend tossing it with his three-pronged fork, like the one they used for heating the oven on baking days; to which picture she added many other quaint and curious details of torment sometimes taught the young in this Christian country.[97]

James Joyce similarly recalled the kind of 'hellfire and damnation' sermon to which he had been subjected as a young man. 'All were as one before the judgement seat of God,' declared the priest of the moment after death.

> He would reward the good and punish the wicked. One single instant was enough for the trial of a man's soul. One single instant after the body's death, the soul had been weighed in the balance. The particular judgement was over and the soul had passed to the abode of bliss or to the prison of purgatory or had been hurled howling into hell.

The priest was later to remind his young listeners that, at the end of the world, God would cast the unjust from him, crying in his offended majesty: 'DEPART FROM ME, YE CURSED, INTO EVERLASTING FIRE WHICH WAS PREPARED FOR THE DEVIL AND HIS ANGELS.'[98]

Nevertheless, the old certainties were becoming much more problematic. That the soul was naturally immortal was a view that had continued to hold sway throughout the eighteenth century, particularly among the proponents of natural theology. It had received support in the nineteenth century in a philosophical idealism, notably in the thought of G. W. F. Hegel (1770–1831), which viewed Spirit (*Geist*) as the essence of both individuals and the universe. Having said that, the view of man as a mortal body united to an immortal soul had become more questionable in both the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, not least as the result of a developing naturalistic materialism that denied, on principle, the existence of all things supernatural, including God, spirits angelic and demonic, and souls.

Thus, for example, for the German philosopher Ludwig Feuerbach (1804–72), whose materialism was in essence Hegel's idealism turned upside down, eternal life was nothing but this life imagined as it ought to be, a merely fictional projection of how we wish life really were in the here and now. The future life, declared Feuerbach in his *The Essence of Christianity* (1841), is nothing but 'the present embellished, contemplated through the imagination, purified from all gross matter; or, positively expressed, it is the

beauteous present intensified.'[99] For Karl Marx (1818–83), Feuerbach had failed to go far enough. Feuerbach's critique of heaven needed to become a critique of earth, of its material practices and social relations: 'after the earthly family is discovered to be the secret of the holy family, the former must then itself be criticised in theory and revolutionised in practice.'[100] As for Feuerbach and Marx, so also for Sigmund Freud (1856–1939), Heaven was an illusion invented to offer hope against the sufferings of this life and compensation for its injustices: 'it brushes away men's fear of the dangers and vicissitudes of life, in so far as it assures them of a happy ending, and comforts them in their misfortunes.'[101] Unlike Feuerbach and Marx, however, Freud has moved the critique of religion from the social to the psychological. The history of religion was for Freud the history of a spiritual illusion that fulfilled the oldest, strongest and most urgent wishes of mankind. It was the unhealthy persistence of the wishes and needs of childhood into maturity. In short, religion, whether in the evolution of mankind or in the development of each individual, was a neurosis 'which the civilised individual must pass through on his way from childhood to maturity'.[102]

Still, for some nineteenth-century Christians, the adoption of materialism did not necessitate the denial of all eschatology. Materialism found sympathisers among those Christians who advocated the death of the soul (soul-deniers), and focused eschatology on the resurrection of the body. It had appeal also for those annihilationists who, denying the soul's natural immortality, saw its immortality as conditional solely on God's continuing goodwill, and envisaged its ultimate destruction at some time after the Last Judgement. At the very least, that man was by nature immortal now had to be argued for by its supporters and not just assumed as a truth demonstrable by reason.

Nineteenth-century debates about the biblical account of hell had also reached a stalemate. The Bible had become as much a cause of diverse accounts of the afterlife as the source of an authoritative unified view. Along with this, the rise of historical criticism, with its attendant diminution of the authority of the Bible, had rendered disputes about the meaning of biblical terms much less determinative and decisive. Moreover, among the theologically liberal, in the light of modern cosmology, heaven and hell were no longer conceived as *places* that could be geographically located. They had become at best *state*s of post-mortem life rather than places. 'Heaven above' and 'hell below' had become merely metaphorical and not literal. For some, 'hell' had become a metaphor more relevant to conditions on

this side of the divide than a literal place on the other. Thus, for example, to the eyes of William Booth (1829–1912), the founder of the Salvation Army, industrial England was itself infernal:

> Talk about Dante's Hell, and all the horrors and cruelty of the torture-chamber of the lost! The man who walks with open eyes and with bleeding heart through the shambles of our civilisation needs no such fantastic images of the poet to teach him horror.[103]

In addition to this, nineteenth-century penal reform was coming to view criminal punishments as restorative rather than retributive. The consequence of this was that it was becoming more difficult to conceive of hell as a site of physical punishment (*poena sensus*). Rather, it was transforming into a site only of psychological punishment (*poena damni*), a state that consisted primarily in the soul's despair at its separation from God.

The nineteenth century's belief in the possibility of progress for individuals and humanity as a whole also saw a decline in the acceptance that the destiny of individuals was fixed at death (or at birth). Salvation by grace and predestination to salvation or damnation (or both) were countered by an emphasis on the individual freely creating his ethical self. Thus, on the other side of life, the individual became free to turn towards God after death, morally to advance, and finally to attain salvation. Kant had established philosophical reasons for this. But it was also reinforced by the theological dominance of an eschatology focused on life immediately after death and not after the Last Judgement. At least among liberals, both Catholic and Protestant, there was no expectation of the imminent return of Christ. The eschatology of the Last Day with its assertion of the end of history and its harsh judgement of eternal happiness or eternal misery, while still theoretically endorsed, was practically ignored.

Doubts about the intellectual coherence of the resurrection of the flesh continued. Henry Bowler's (1824–1903) painting *The Doubt: Can These Dry Bones Live?* (1855; Plate 27 [c]) gave eloquent expression to the tensions between doubts about the resurrection of the dead and the biblical certainty of it, between the exhumed remains of 'John Faithful' lying on the ground and the biblical text on the gravestone *from John 11.25* – 'I am the resurrection and the life.' The melancholic expression on the face of the young woman leaning on the gravestone leaves the viewer in no doubt that this *is* a painting about doubt. By the end of the nineteenth century,

the balance had shifted irrevocably away from the post-resurrection body and towards the post-mortem spirit.

The division that was progressively hardening during the nineteenth century between conservative and liberal views of life after death was paralleled by another contrast – that between elite views of the afterlife and an emerging popular view. The focus of attention now became the life of the spirit immediately after death in a newly emerging nineteenth-century heaven to which all could reasonably aspire. In this afterlife, hell no longer had a role, and even God and his saints and martyrs faded into the background.

Chapter Seven

Heavens, Sacred and Secular

There is a land of pure delight
Where saints immortal reign;
Infinite day excludes the night,
And pleasures banish pain.

There everlasting spring abides,
And never-withering flowers;
Death like a narrow sea divides
This heavenly land from ours.

Isaac Watts (1674–1748)

The early modern heaven

Between the torments of the damned and the joys of the saved, there was a contrast of symmetries, of light and dark, joy and misery, pleasures and pains. The nature of the delights of heaven, however, was less commented upon than the horrors of hell. This can be explained by the conviction that concentrating on the torments of the lost was more an incentive to the leading of a godly life than dwelling on its rewards. As the French Catholic François-René Chateaubriand (1768–1848) was to put it:

> Heaven, where boundless felicity reigns, is too far above the human condition for the soul to be strongly affected by the bliss of the elect: one can interest oneself but little in beings who are perfectly happy. This is why poets have succeeded better in the description of hells: at least humanity is there, and the torments of the guilty remind us of the miseries of this life.[1]

That said, in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, there was little doubt that, as the torments of the damned would include the eternal absence of

God, so the happiness of the blessed would consist in living eternally in the presence of God. Thus, for example the philosopher Thomas Browne (1605–82) saw heaven as nothing but the presence of God. After God had destroyed the world, he wrote, all that would remain would be an empty space filled with the divine presence. He alone was the place in which the blessed would reside:

> when this sensible world shall bee destroyed, all shall then bee as it is now there, an Empyreall Heaven [...] To aske where Heaven is, is to demand where the presence of God is, or where wee have the glory of that happy vision.[2]

This image of the God-centred heavenly life reached its classic Puritan statement in Richard Baxter's *The Saints' Everlasting Rest* (1650). For Baxter, the focus of heaven was God alone:

> As all Good whatsoever is comprised in God, and all in the creature are but drops of this Ocean: So all the Glory of the blessed is comprised in their enjoyment of God; and if there be any mediate Joys, they are but drops from this. If men and Angels should study to speak the blessedness of that estate in one word, what can they say beyond this, That it is the nearest enjoyment of God?[3]

There were, as Baxter suggested, 'drops of joy' other than the presence of God. He, like a number of his contemporaries, did distinguish between the primary glory of the vision of God and a secondary glory that consisted of fellowship with the saints and angels. He looked forward to the day when he would sit down with Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses and David. He anticipated with joy eternally dwelling with Peter and Paul, Augustine and Jerome, and with the Reformation worthies: Luther, Calvin, Zwingli, Beza and Bullinger – indeed with 'all the Saints of all ages, whose faces in the flesh we never saw, whom we shall there both know and comfortable enjoy'.[4]

Baxter's heaven is a God-centred one. But it is also a heavenly society. He was deeply committed to the belief that our present knowledge would be increased, and therefore that we would once again know our friends in heaven. We would not know each other according to our physical appearance – by stature, voice, colour, complexion or outward shape – nor by titles

of honour and worldly dignity, by age or sex. But, he confidently declared, 'by the Image of Christ, and spiritual relation, and former faithfulness in improving our Talents, beyond doubt, we shall know and be known.'[5]

Many of these themes in Baxter recurred throughout the writings of the period. Andrew Marvell (1621–78), Milton's assistant and Oliver Cromwell's court poet, somewhat toadyingly placed the Lord Protector alongside Moses, Joshua and David.[6] To the Anglican William Gearing (*fl.* 1660–90), the blessed would behold the glory of God and would see the face of Christ as do friends now behold each other's faces, albeit with glorified vision. They would also see not only the faces of all the saved but also those of the patriarchs, saints, prophets, Apostles and martyrs. They would also reacquaint themselves with old friends. If the soul can carry with it a sociable inclination, Gearing surmised,

> then may it for the use and exercise of this desire be admitted to the knowledge of other Souls, and of those especially with whom it had sojourned on Earth, that like fellow-travellers […] they may thenceforth interchangeably communicate their joys, springing from their present rest and peace.[7]

This issue of friends in heaven was extensively dealt with in 1698 by John Dunton (1659–1733), the founder of the Athenian Society. Written on the death of his wife Elizabeth, *An Essay Proving We Shall Know Our Friends in Heaven* claimed (and rightly so) to be the first book totally devoted to this subject. It was the hope of being reunited with his deceased wife that motivated Dunton's essay. To this end, he assembled a number of sources in which the expectation of meeting husbands, wives and children in the afterlife was mooted.

For Dunton, life in heaven would be a continuation of the social relations present in this world. Society, he argued, was not comfortable without familiar acquaintance, and heaven would be no different. 'Be assured,' he wrote, that familiar acquaintance

> shall not be wanting in the Height and Perfection of all Glory, Bliss, and Joy. Nay, our Minds being abundantly and beatifically illuminated with all Wisdom and Knowledge, we shall be acquainted to know, not only those of former Holy Acquaintance, but also Strangers, and such as we never knew before.[8]

Dunton was familiar with Baxter's *Everlasting Rest*. In contrast to Baxter, however, he maintained that we would know each other by face, stature, voice and difference of sex. Indeed, on the issue of whether sexual identity would be retained in heaven, he specifically argued against Baxter. Thus, while he maintained that there would be no sexual relations between husbands and wives, the heavenly body would conform to the disposition of the soul, which was eternally male or female:

> [T]he soul [...] of the one is Resolute and Constant, that of the other Light, Wavering and Changeable [...] The Soul of one takes a pride in being Grave, and speaking little; the other talks much, and cannot forbear *twatling upon every thing*.[9]

A similar stereotype of women had appeared in 1691 in the *Athenian Gazette*, which Dunton edited, although the discussion of sexual identity in heaven was different. In answer to a reader's question, 'Are there sexes in heaven?' the columnist argued that in a state of perfection and bliss, anything imperfect and accidental would be removed, and consequently sexuality should be. He couldn't resist the following:

> We won't add for another Reason what, as we remember, one of the Fathers has said – That *were there any women in Heaven, the Angels cou'd not stand long*, but would certainly be seduced from their Innocency, and Fall as *Adam* did.[10]

Still, in spite of any standard 'sexist' leanings, that Dunton was distraught by the death of his wife and deeply comforted by the thought of their eventual union is clear. 'Her Death,' he poignantly wrote, 'has made me so very melancholy, that I had pin'd away in a few days, had not the hopes of finding her again in Heaven, given me *some Relief*.'[11]

Similar sentiments were expressed in the poet Elizabeth Singer Rowe's (1674–1737) *Friendship in Death*, first published in 1728, with more than 30 editions in the eighteenth century and a readership into the nineteenth.[12] In these 20 letters from the dead to the living, the reader was assured that human love was an essential part of life in the beautiful celestial realm. Rowe's heaven had tinges of embodied eroticism and flavours of Eden. For her, death could not sever the bonds of love, whether between parents and children, husbands and wives, or brothers and sisters. According to Peter

Walmsley, Rowe's heaven is 'a new Christian society whose bounds are affective and natural rather than disciplinary and conventional, a society of loving souls which extends from this world to the next'.[13] It is a sign of things to come. For it is a heaven from which God is conspicuously absent, a secular Paradise. The spirit of this work is amply conveyed by the letter of Altamont, who had died grieving for his wife Almeria:

> The first gentle Spirit that welcom'd me to these new Regions, was the lovely *Almeria*; but how Dazling! How divinely Fair! Extasy was in her Eyes, and inexpressible Pleasure in every smile! Her Mien and Aspect more soft and propitious than ever was feign'd by Poets of their Goddess of Beauty and Love: What was airy Fiction *there*, was *here* all transporting Reality. With an inimitable Grace she received me into her aetherial Chariot, which was sparkling Saphire studded with Gold […] But how shall I describe this fair, this fragrant, this enchanting Land of Love! The Myrtle Shades and rosy Bowers, the bright Cascades and chrystal Rivulets rolling over Orient Pearls and Sands of Gold: Here they spread their silent Waves into broad transparent Lakes, smooth as the Face of Heaven; and there they break with rapid Force through arching Rocks of Diamond and Purple Amethist.[14]

These visions of the reunion in heaven of families and friends were no doubt the consequence of changing patterns of human relationships. In particular, the desire to be reunited with spouses reflected the growth during the early modern period in the companionate marriage, one in which each partner contributed to the spiritual, emotional and intellectual well-being of the other. And the sacralisation of the companionate marriage in the afterlife in such works as Rowe's no doubt helped to normalise the companionate marriage in this life.

What is also clear is that the boundaries between life and death were breaking down. Heaven was more a continuation of this life than discontinuous with it, albeit one where pain and sorrow are no more. As Isaac Watts put it in the hymn with which this chapter began, death is now merely 'a narrow sea' dividing this 'heavenly land from ours'. Watts had himself created a version of the social heaven combined with a traditional God-centred one. There is little doubt that Watts's two main works on the afterlife were highly influential. His *The World to Come* went through five editions in the eighteenth century, while his *Death and Heaven* saw 16

by 1818. In Watts's heaven, for the saved, there will be clear and unerring knowledge, unspotted holiness and everlasting joy. We will progress in all of these. We will know things in

> a manner something akin to the Way whereby God knows us […] such a sort of Knowledge as we have of a Man when we see his Face […] a certain and unwavering Knowledge, without remaining Doubts, without Error, or Mistake.[15]

Holiness and happiness will combine in the love and service of God and our fellow creatures. There will be no envy, ambition and malice, for a universal benevolence runs through the whole kingdom. We do not know what senses the resurrected body will have. The organs of light and sound, however, will be such as transcend those we have in our present state. Certainly, there will be no pain: '[N]o Gout nor Stone, no Infirmity nor Distemper, no Head-ach nor Heart-ach shall ever attend them.'[16]

In heaven, the blessed will be eternally awake, not least because heaven is a place where there is neither night nor darkness (in contrast to hell, where all is gloom). The light of heaven, Watts wrote, 'is constant without Interruption, and Everlasting or without end'.[17] So, no rest there for the virtuous! Who could get to sleep, he asked, 'under the full Blaze of divine Glory, under the incessant Communications of divine Love?'[18] All the regions of Paradise are constantly illuminated by the glory of God. Not so much a place of eternal rest, Watts's heaven is a place of never-ending activity. The saved would not have it otherwise. Those who have actively served God on earth 'can hardly bear the Thoughts of paying no active Duties, doing no work at all for him in heaven, where Business is all over Delight, and Labour is all Enjoyment'.[19] It will be a delight because our faculties will then be so suited to our work that we will never feel fatigued by it. Everlasting active service will combine with eternal delight and satisfaction. 'Business and Pleasure,' Watts declared, 'are for ever the same among all the inhabitants.'[20] The ideal of the dignity of labour predominates in this very Protestant heaven.

Work in heaven will reflect its variety in the human world. Our various skills will there be put to use. Scientists will continue their research.[21] Theologians will continue to ply their trade.[22] Thus, souls will work in heaven in ways suited to their former earthly capacities, although some of them will be trained to undertake higher duties. Indeed, there will be a

form of governance there, for some spirits 'may be appointed Visitors and Superintendents over whole Provinces of intelligent Beings in lower Regions, who are yet labouring in their State of Probation'.[23] Similarly, there will be degrees of reward in heaven relative to the level of virtue attained in this life. In the theatre of heaven, the more virtuous will have the better seats:

> Can we think that Abraham and Moses, who were train'd up in converse with God face to face, as a Man converses with his Friend [...] were not prepar'd for a greater intimacy with God, and nearer views of his Glory in heaven, than Sampson and Jephthah those rude Heroes, who spent their Days in bloody Work, in hewing down the Philistines and the Ammonites?[24]

Much time will be spent in worship, songs and prayer. But there will also be lectures and sermons given to the younger spirits by those more exalted. Watts's heaven resembles an eternal academic conference held at a fashionable resort. Conversations with angels will inform the saved of their transactions with men. Adam will acquaint us with the nature of innocence, of the trees of Knowledge and of Life, and of how he fell. Enoch and Elijah will tell us how they were translated to heaven, while Noah will speak of the Ark, and Abraham of his converse with God and angels. Paul and Moses will speak of the Jewish Law, and the Reformation worthies – Thomas Cranmer and Nicholas Ridley, Calvin and Luther – will tell of how they threw off 'the Chains, the Darkness and the Defilements of [papal] Antichrist'.[25] And if it should seem unreasonable that they should have to do this for every new arrival in heaven,

> 'tis very unreasonable to suppose, that Spirits made perfect and glorify'd have not a Power of communicating their Thoughts to many more Thousands by immediate Converse: and 'tis past our Reach to conceive what unknown Methods may be in use amongst them, to transmit their Ideas and Narratives.[26]

In any case, memories will be good, and older spirits can give accounts of such matters to the newly arrived. There will also be opportunities for travel. The blessed, 'active and swift as Sun-Beams', will be able to make journeys to distant 'Planetary Worlds' (perhaps other 'soular systems'), to boldly go where no man has gone before. Thence they can bring back 'new

Lectures of Divine Wisdom or Tidings of the affairs of those Provinces, to entertain our Fellow-Spirits.'[27] These will not be especially lengthy journeys, for heavenly bodies, as John Shower suggested and most would have agreed, could move at a speed of many 'thousands of Miles in an hour.'[28]

The doctrine of the communion of saints (*communio sanctorum*) had always implied a union between Christians on earth with one another and with those in heaven or Purgatory. By implication, it included communion between those in heaven. As early as the third century, Roman beliefs about the reunion of friends and family in heaven had found their way into Christianity. Thus, Augustine quoted Cyprian (d.258) to the effect that 'A great number of those who are dear to us are expecting us there – a dense and abundant crowd of parents, brethren, sons, are longing for us; already secure of their own safety, but still anxious about our salvation.'[29] That said, it remained very much a minor tradition within Christianity until the early modern period.

However, that the nature of the afterlife had become, by the second half of the eighteenth century, a part of general conversation and speculation about reunion with friends crucial to it, is demonstrated by Boswell's *Life of Johnson* (1791). In March 1772, Samuel Johnson's (1709–84) biographer James Boswell (1740–95), anxious to know Johnson's opinion about the future state, led him into a discussion of the afterlife. It will consist, declared Johnson, in a consciousness of the favour of God, in the contemplation of truth and in the possession of felicitating ideas. 'Is there any harm,' asked Boswell, 'in our forming to ourselves conjectures as to the particulars of our happiness, though the Scripture has said but very little on the subject?' To which Johnson replied, 'Sir, there is no harm.' And he went on to recommend the last word in philosophy on the matter, namely, the Platonist Henry More, the two-volume folio of whose works was for sale at the cost of about eight shillings. One of the most pleasing thoughts, Boswell continued, is 'that we shall see our friends again'. On this, Johnson was less confident. 'Yes, Sir,' he pronounced,

> but you must consider, that when we are become purely rational, many of our friendships will be cut off. Many friendships are formed by a community of sensual pleasures: all these will be cut off. We form many friendships with bad men, because they have agreeable qualities, and they can be useful to us; but, after death, they can no longer be of use to us. We form many friendships by mistake, imagining people to be

> different from what they really are. After death, we shall see everyone in a true light. Then Sir, they talk of our meeting with relations: but then all relationship is dissolved; and we shall have no regard for one person more than another, but for their real value. However, we shall either have the satisfaction of meeting our friends, or be satisfied without meeting them.[30]

There were others similarly worried about a heaven that was becoming too earthly. In 1739, for example, the *Gentleman's Magazine* published a reader's letter complaining about authors who, following John Milton's *Paradise Lost*, were

> corrupting our Notions of Spiritual Things and sensualizing our Ideas of Heaven to a Degree that may have ill Effects on Religion in general: It is letting Fancy obtrude its wild Luxuriance into the Place of Truth and Reason, and making room for the grossest and most absurd kind of Enthusiasm, and if one is to interpret his [Milton's] other Descriptions of Heaven by this Hint, it is every whit as sensual as the Mahometan's.[31]

In the early modern period, as in earlier centuries, heavenly bodies, like heavenly places, were ambiguous mixtures of the corporeal and the spiritual. That the bodies of those in the afterlife were fashioned after the virtues and vices of the souls who inhabited them was a common theme: lucid, refulgent, glorious, spiritual, heavenly, transparent and angelic for the good; gross, dark, foetid, diseased and demonic for the wicked. The much-admired (by Samuel Johnson) Henry More saw heavenly bodies as manifesting visibly the nature of the soul:

> For if Vertue and Vice can be ever seen with outward eyes, it must be in these aerial Vehicles […] that the Soule in a manner becomes perfectly transparent through them, discovering her lovely beauty in all the efflorescencies thereof, to the ineffable enravishment of the beholder.[32]

The *Athenian Gazette* described our resurrection bodies as 'shining and bright'.[33] The contrast between light and dark, heaven and hell, was interestingly expressed in the same journal in answer to the question of whether 'negroes' would rise so on the Last Day: 'Black is of the colour of the night,' we are informed,

> frightful, dark and horrid; but White of the Day and Light, refreshing and lovely. Taking then this blackness of the Negro to be an accidental Imperfection […] we conclude thence, that he shall not arise with that Complexion, but leave it behind him in the darkness of the Grave, exchanging it for a brighter and a better at his return agen into the World.[34]

The form of the heavenly body was also much discussed. For More, heavenly bodies would appear in the ordinary form of angels, 'such a countenance, and so cloathed, as they'.[35] And the angelic form was very much like the human. Although for More there would be no lust, nor difference of sex between heavenly beings, there would be some discrimination of beauty into male and female. The scientist Thomas Burnet agreed that heavenly bodies would be like those of the angels, lucid and ethereal, and consisting of celestial matter 'as pure and thin, as the finest Air or Aether'.[36] But unlike More, who believed that souls would have hearing, sight, touch, smell and taste, Burnet's heavenly bodies would have neither palate, throat, bowels nor sexual parts; in fact, bodies that, while recognisably angelic, were not obviously human. The bodies of the blessed would also be of a perfect age – that of Christ during his ministry on earth, that is, about 30 to 33. Those who had died in infancy or were severely deformed would be made perfect. In Elizabeth Rowe's *Friendship in Death*, the deceased two-year-old child found itself immediately after death 'an active and reasonable Being'.[37] William Gearing was unwilling to specify an 'age' for the heavenly body, but he was nonetheless convinced of its physical perfection: '[T]he Infant and the Dwarf shall be made a proper man! […] when the Child that left its own soul before it left the Womb, shall in an instant, without growth, be as big as the Mother.'[38]

In their work *Heaven: A History*, Colleen McDannell and Bernhard Lang make much of the transition from a God-centred heaven focused on the eternal worship and praise of God to a modern heaven characterised by four features. First, only a thin veil separates heaven from earth, and heavenly life begins immediately after death. Second, rather than heaven being structurally opposite to life on earth, it is a continuation and fulfilment of material existence. Third, although heaven remains a place of rest, the saints are increasingly active in heaven, making progress in a joy-filled environment. Finally, a focus on human love replaces the primacy of the divine love experienced in the form of the Beatific Vision. Social relationships

are fundamental to the afterlife, not a distraction from it, and God is loved primarily through the love shown to other heavenly spirits.[39]

As we have seen, all of these features were coming into play in the period between 1500 and 1750. Be that as it may, the dominant feature of the early modern heaven remained the gulf fixed not only between earth and heaven but also between heaven and hell. The sufferings of this world were swallowed up in eternal felicity, or intensified in the horrors of hell. This world was, in the main, a mixed realm halfway between the two kingdoms of good and evil, of light and dark.

Between 1750 and 1900, this was to change. The God-centred heaven was taken over by one centred on human relationships; the sacred heaven became secularised, especially in the popular imagination. This was not least because of the influence of a Swedish Lutheran visionary: Emanuel Swedenborg (1688–1772; Plate 28 [BW]) – 'that divinely chosen seer of our age', as Goethe described him, 'who was impregnated with the joys of heaven, to whom the spirits spoke through all senses and the entire body, in whose bosom the angels lived'.[40] For Swedenborg claimed, in his visions, to have crossed the narrow sea, to have experienced life on the other side, and to have conversed with the spirits there, all of whom once lived a normal life on earth. In Swedenborg, we have a new source of knowledge of the afterlife beyond both reason and revelation, namely, personal visionary experience.

The visions of Emanuel Swedenborg

For Immanuel Kant, as we have seen, practical reason demanded the postulation of the immortality of the soul. About the details of the afterlife, however, Kant had nothing to say. For him, they were beyond what could be known. So it is a matter for little surprise that Kant described Swedenborg's major work, the *Arcana coelestia* (Heavenly mysteries; 1749–56) as 'full of nonsense' and 'void of the last drop of reason'.[41] Kant's attack ended the intellectual respectability of a man who, until he had a vision from God in London in 1745 in which he saw heaven and hell, was an esteemed scientist. For the rest of his life, Swedenborg set out to map the worlds of spirits. Thus, it is as the seer and not as the scientist that he is remembered, albeit as one who attempted to come to terms with a secular world – one that had been scientifically disenchanted – by his visions of a spiritual world 'alongside' the material one and corresponding to it. Strongly influenced

by the body–mind dualism of the French philosopher René Descartes (1596–1650), this was Cartesianism gone cosmic. Ironically, body and soul, matter and spirit, science and religion were reconciled by emphasising their fundamental differences.

According to Swedenborg, the material world that we now inhabit is one of innumerable such populated planets.[42] It is located between heaven and hell, in the former of which the inhabitants love the Lord and their neighbour, in the latter of which the inhabitants love the world and themselves. Both of these kingdoms try to influence those in this world by means of spirits from hell and angels from heaven. These forces balance each other out, with the result that individuals are free to choose the one or the other. As a consequence, our eternal destiny is in our hands alone. We are saved or damned not by faith or by predestination, but through our own free choice for good or evil and through the active expression of these in our lives. Life in the here and now, as in heaven, is a matter of active thoughtfulness for our neighbour:

> [T]he life that leads to heaven is not one of withdrawal from the world but a life in the world […] a life of thoughtfulness, a life of behaving honestly and fairly in every duty, every affair, every task, from our deeper nature and therefore from a heavenly source. The source of this life is within us when we act honestly and fairly because doing so is in accord with divine laws.[43]

Thus, the good life is active and not contemplative. In virtuous and active living, we mimic the angels: 'the life of angels is cheerful and blessed. It consists of worthwhile activities that are deeds of thoughtfulness.'[44]

At the time of death, we enter the world of spirits (*mundus spiritum*). Here, there is a vast number of spirits gathered. As the place of preparation to enter heaven or hell, there is no fixed limit to our stay in this world of spirits. Some have only barely entered and are taken up into heaven or cast down into hell. Some stay for weeks, others for years, although no more than 30. The more that our deeper nature is in correspondence with our outward nature, the less time is spent in the world of spirits. Upon arrival there is a careful sorting by the Lord. Evil people are connected with the hellish community that their ruling love (self-love) had affiliated them with while still in the world, and good people with those of love, thoughtfulness and faith with whom they had connected while still in the world. Even so,

for a while at least, people seem to be more or less the same as they were in the material world. We are free to talk to anyone that we wish to:

> friends and acquaintances from our physical life, especially husbands and wives, and also brothers and sisters. I have seen a father talking with his six sons and recognising them. I have seen many other people with their relatives and friends.[45]

In the next state after death, people are transformed into their true selves. This is the result of being taken up by angels who instruct them about the Lord, heaven and the angelic life. Arrivals with an overall disposition to evil soon wish to get away from their angelic instructors. When the angels notice this, they leave them. These people will drift towards others of a similarly evil nature, thus turning away from God and towards the hell they were united with in this world. Those whose good nature dominates will eventually slough off any remaining evil and be purified. At this point, their appearances change. The face becomes very different from the face of the body and 'comes to look like the ruling affection in which the deeper reaches of our mind were engaged in the world, the kind of affection characteristic of the spirit within the body'.[46] People who were 'engaged in good affections have lovely faces, while people who were engaged in evil affections have ugly ones'.[47] Hypocrites, skilled as they are in counterfeiting good affections, take longer to become even uglier. It is now that the final separation of the good from the wicked occurs. The wicked choose to go into hell, while the good prepare to enter heaven.

Swedenborg's most radical innovation now occurs. The good now enter the world of the angels. More importantly, they become angels: '[F]or we have been created to enter heaven and become angels.' Not surprising, then, that angels have a truly human form! 'I can say with full confidence,' declared Swedenborg on the grounds of several years of experience,

> that in their form, angels are completely human. They have faces, eyes, ears, chests, arms, hands, and feet. They see each other, hear each other, and talk to each other. In short, they lack nothing that belongs to humans except that they are not clothed with a material body.[48]

Angels talk to each other about various 'everyday' things – domestic matters, community concerns, issues of moral and spiritual life. They cannot,

however, speak any human languages. The angelic language that they speak is differentiated into words, is articulated in sound, and is innate. But most importantly, it is unlike any human language because it is the language of Adam before the Fall, or of mankind before Babel (resembling Hebrew).[49] In the language of the angels, there is a perfect 'natural' correlation between words and ideas, not a merely artificial one, as in human languages. That we will be able to speak it (and Swedenborg could understand it) is the result of its remaining deep within us after the Fall. Thus, the angels can speak the universal language, the quest for which had occupied many theologians, linguists, mystics and magicians during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.[50] This was no doubt an idea that Swedenborg drew from his reading of the Lutheran John Engelbrecht's (1599–1642) *True Account and Vision of Heaven and Hell*. Engelbrecht too purported to translate into his own language that of the angels.[51]

Be that as it may, according to Swedenborg, like-minded angels may come together to live in communities, the larger ones consisting of tens of thousands of individuals, the smaller of thousands, the smallest of hundreds. There are nonetheless people who live alone. Within these communities, the blessed – that is, the angels – live in houses. These are much the same as earthly homes, only more beautiful: 'They have chambers, suites, and bedrooms in abundance, and courtyards with gardens, flower beds, and lawns around them.'[52] The houses are arranged in the form of a city, with streets, lanes and public squares, 'just like the ones we see in cities on our earth.'[53] There are also palaces, beautiful beyond description, and parklands 'where everything sparkled in the same way, here and there the leaves like silver and the fruits like gold, with the flowers in their beds making virtual rainbows with their colours.'[54]

Granting that the form of the angels is like that of their earlier human selves, the angels are divided into male and female. This leads Swedenborg again to break with the long Christian tradition of there being no marriage in heaven (or at least of no weddings in heaven).[55] Marriage in heaven is, however, different to that on earth. It is a meeting not of bodies but of minds. 'Marriage love,' he wrote,

> finds its source in the union of two people in one mind. In heaven, this is called 'living together', and they are not called 'two' but 'one'. Consequently two spouses in heaven are not called two angels but one angel.[56]

Because the heavenly communities consist of like-minded people, it is a matter of instant attraction: 'So at first sight they love each other most deeply, see each other as married partners, and enter into their marriage.'[57] Heavenly weddings are followed by feasts that are attended by many. The key difference between earthly and heavenly marriages is procreation. Although there are sexual relations between couples in heaven, in place of the procreation of children, there is only 'the procreation of what is good and true'. There is no place in heaven for the Beatific Vision. Rather, the emphasis is on the erotic union of two people, in which the love of the man is the truth flowing towards the good, and the love of the woman is the good flowing towards the true. Here erotic love has replaced divine love as the ultimate source of goodness. Conjugal sex is the exemplar of the sacred.

Swedenborg was far more interested in the heavenly than the infernal life. It will come as no surprise that evil spirits were former human beings, destined to spend eternity in hell. However, unlike in Christian orthodoxy, this could not be the consequence of any direct action by a God who was goodness itself. Rather, it was the result of the cultivation by the spirits in hell of a disposition to evil in their earthly life that continued to assert itself when they entered the world of spirits after death. 'So after death, it is we,' Swedenborg declared, 'not the Lord, who cast ourselves into hell.'[58] The tortures of hell were physical, but not divinely inflicted. Rather, 'The Hellish mob craves and loves nothing more than inflicting harm, especially punishing and torturing.'[59] And there was no escape because our nature is already fixed for eternity, as good or evil, at death. The evil lived there in various hells, according to the degree of their wickedness, in what amounted to a post-apocalyptic world beneath the earth of caves of fire and darkness, of the ruins of cities and houses, of brothels full of filth and excrement, of deserts and dark forests 'where hellish spirits roam like wild beasts', of the wicked raging against each other.[60] The most evil of them were able to attack those on earth, 'making themselves unnoticeable and floating around others like ghosts, doing their harm covertly, spraying it around like the venom of snakes'.[61]

All of this was the consequence of what Swedenborg claimed was an intensely personal vision. He was forbidden, he somewhat disingenuously claimed, 'to read authors on dogmatic and systematic theology, before heaven was opened to me; because unfounded opinions and fictions might have easily insinuated themselves thereby, which afterwards could only have been removed with difficulty.'[62] Readers of Swedenborg look in vain for any references to those who might intellectually have influenced him. Church

people, declared Swedenborg in 1758, know practically nothing about heaven and hell or their life after death. For the sake of those of simple heart and simple faith, wrote Swedenborg,

> it has been granted to me to be with angels and to talk with them person to person. I have also been enabled to see what is in heaven and hell, a process that has been going on for thirteen years.[63]

That he was innovative is beyond doubt. During the eighteenth century, as a consequence of the scientific revolution, nature had come more and more to be seen as 'disenchanted', indeed as merely 'dead' matter. This had rendered intellectually redundant the tradition of Renaissance esotericism, embedded in Neoplatonism and the Hermetic tradition, which had seen nature in its essence as 'enchanted', as imbued with life and spirit. Although undoubtedly influenced by the esoteric tradition, the significance of Swedenborg lay in his rejecting nature as 'alive', accepting its 'death' and discovering a spiritual realm 'over against' it rather than 'deep' within it or part of it. Simply put, from the time of Swedenborg, the realm of spirit becomes 'the other side' rather than the reality underpinning 'this side'.[64]

Swedenborg's angels were more than merely sexually active. Like earthly life should be, heavenly life was highly active in a number of ways. As on earth, so also in heaven, there was a variety of heavenly occupations – ecclesiastical, civic and domestic. Churchgoing occurred, but the essential worship of God in heaven was the life of active love, thoughtfulness and right faith. Some spirits took care of people on earth as guardian angels, while others worked in hell, ensuring that those there were not tortured beyond set limits. Some cared for new arrivals as they awakened from death in the world of the spirits, while others prepared new arrivals, both Christian and non-Christian, to enter heaven.[65] No longer doomed to limbo, nor destined to spend eternity as an infant or child, every child that died (whether a member of the Church or not, baptised or not) was admitted into heaven to become an angel. Thus, some communities took care of babies while others taught young boys and girls while they were growing up.

Swedenborg's was a vision of heaven that was to find expression in the work of William Blake (1757–1827), particularly in his illustrations for *The Grave*, an 1808 poem by Robert Blair. Blake had been, at least for a time, a devotee of Swedenborg, and had studied his *Heaven and Hell*. Thus, his drawing of *The Meeting of a Family in Heaven* (Plate 29 [BW]) shows

a couple reunited after death with two other 'couples' in close embrace. To the modern viewer, it all looks innocent enough. But contemporary viewers were shocked. One declared in the 7 August 1808 edition of the newspaper the *Examiner* that 'the salutation of a man and his wife meeting in the pure mansions of Heaven' presented 'the most indecent attitudes' because 'libidinousness intrudes itself upon our thoughts'.[66]

Blake was not alone in his vision of an eroticised, or at least romanticised, afterlife. The art and poetry of Dante Gabriel Rossetti (1828–82), founder of the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood, was characterised by its evocations of sensuality. Thus, in the final version of his poem 'The blessed Damozel' (1881), while the damozel looked longingly over the bar of heaven upon the earth beneath hoping for the soul of her lover to come to her,

> Around her, lovers, newly met
> 'Mid deathless love's acclaims
> Spoke evermore among themselves
> Their heart-remember'd names;
> And the souls mounting up to God
> Went by her like thin flames.[67]

This vision of the afterlife as the reunion of lovers in heaven is also found in the background to Rossetti's painting *The Blessed Damozel* (Plate 32 [c]). Here are depicted the embraces of reunited lovers in heaven above the damozel, who looks down, past the angels, to her earthly lover resting beside a river in a wooded landscape.

All this is not to say that the God-centred heaven disappeared from the nineteenth-century imagination. Bishop Reginald Heber (1783–1826), most remembered for his 'politically incorrect' hymn 'The heathen in his blindness bows down to wood and stone', reminded churchgoers on Trinity Sunday in his hymn 'Holy, holy, holy' that

> all the saints adore thee,
> Casting down their golden crowns upon the glassy sea;
> Cherubim and Seraphim falling down before thee
> Which wert, and art, and evermore shalt be.[68]

In a more secular vein, the God-centred heaven was reinforced by Christina Rossetti (1830–94), Gabriel Rossetti's sister, for whom her brother's heaven

of 'The blessed Damozel' fell short of the highest view. For her, in the poem 'From house to home', the love between couples was swallowed up in the divine love. Although hands locked never to be separated again, there was much plucking of harps and casting of crowns as

> Each face looked one way like a moon new-lit,
> Each face looked one way towards its Sun of Love;
> Drank love and bathed in love and mirrored it
> And knew no end thereof.[69]

The Gates Ajar

Arguably, Swedenborg was ultimately responsible for the idea in modern Western popular culture that heaven is the continuation of a life only minimally different to the best of life on this side – a place of spiritual growth, of social relations, of enjoyable labours and pleasant pastimes. But for the history of eschatology, he was more than this. He signalled the end of a spirituality dominated by philosophers, pastors and priests. Others wished to go where he had gone, to see the delights of heaven for themselves and to commune with the world of spirits. As early as 1810, of a rural community in Leicestershire, the English poet George Crabbe (1754–1832) wrote that

> Some Swedenborgians in our street are found,
> Those wandering walkers on enchanted ground,
> Who in our world can other Worlds survey,
> And speak with Spirits though confined in clay.[70]

In short, Swedenborg was in the vanguard of those who, in the nineteenth century, oversaw the democratisation of spirituality and, in some cases, its political radicalisation. Thus, for example, Andrew Jackson Davis (1826–1910), the so-called 'Poughkeepsie seer', was especially influenced by Swedenborg as the latter's writings began to influence North America. He dictated his 800-page *The Principles of Nature, Her Divine Revelation, and a Voice to Mankind by and through Andrew Jackson Davis* (1847) while in a trance. Going through 34 editions in less than 30 years, the work involved (very) lengthy explanations of the nature of the universe and visionary schemes for social reform. As a consequence, the 'Harmonial Philosophy'

struck a chord as much among this-worldly dreamers of social reform (abolitionists, prohibitionists, educationalists, animal protectionists and feminists) as among other-worldly visionaries. It was as much about preparing for a heavenly utopia on this side of the grave as preparing us for a utopian heaven on the other.[71]

More focused on informing her readers of the next world than reforming this one, Elizabeth Stuart Phelps (1844–1911) was among the most influential popularisers of the social heaven. Her book *The Gates Ajar* (1868) was the second-best-selling novel of the nineteenth century.[72] It told the story of Mary Cabot, a New England woman finding it difficult to come to terms with the death of her brother Roy in the American Civil War. Mary was the better able to do so after the arrival of her Aunt Winifred, who was able to console her with a different understanding of heaven, one not of the vision of God but of social relations and useful activities.

Phelps was familiar with the writings of Swedenborg. She has Aunt Winifred rather cutely declare that she was a Swedenborgian '[u]ntil I read his books'.[73] But around Phelps's heaven there is nonetheless a distinctly Swedenborgian air. Her brother Roy is only out of sight, but he is 'here, close beside you all this time'.[74] Along with Roy, we all become angels in the next life. Death is simply 'the slipping off of the outer body, as a husk slips off from its kernel'.[75] God is represented primarily by a very human Jesus with whom we will talk 'as a man talketh with a friend'.[76] She endorses Swedenborg's view that babies will outnumber adults and will be 'given into the care of those women especially fond of them'.[77] She even quotes Swedenborg's *Heaven and Hell* on the nature of heavenly housing.[78]

On the other hand, hell was conspicuously absent. And Phelps would have firmly rejected Swedenborg's eroticised heaven.[79] Her heaven was about romantic love, family life and 'Victorian' values. So it was a much more domesticated, genteel and well-mannered affair. It just as firmly rejected the Protestant orthodoxy of a God-centred heaven:

> There was something about adoration, and the harpers harping with their harps, and the sea of glass, and crying, Worthy the Lamb! and a great deal more that bewildered and disheartened me so that I could scarcely listen to it. I do not doubt that we shall glorify God primarily and happily, but can we not do it in some other way than by harping and praying?[80]

Thus, Phelps's heaven was a projection into the afterlife of the bourgeois sensibilities of provincial life in nineteenth-century New England. As Mark Twain rather unkindly put it, hers was 'a mean little ten-cent heaven about the size of Rhode Island.'[81]

Although in heaven we will be in spiritual bodies, we will be very much ourselves, easily recognisable to others. Thus, it will be a place of companionship, of amiable conversation, of 'talk and laugh and joke and play'.[82] We will see both sacred and secular heroes – King David and Paul, the poets William Cowper and Elizabeth Barrett Browning, and Abraham Lincoln. Domestic life is made divine and divine life domesticated. 'A happy home is the happiest thing in the world,' declared Aunt Winifred. 'I do not see why it should not be in any world […] I expect to have my beautiful home, and my husband, and [my daughter] Faith, as I had them here.'[83] Children will play the piano, have toys and eat strawberries and gingersnaps. Adults will have books and music, art galleries and orchestral halls, and perhaps there will be travel to other planets. Pleasant labour will be available to all. The humble Abinadab Quirk takes heart from the assurance of Aunt Winifred that there will be work for him in heaven: 'Perhaps I could help 'em build a church, or hist some of their pearl gates, or something like!'[84]

This popular social heaven was not the preserve of Protestants alone. The Jesuit François-René Blot's (1825–98) *In Heaven We Know Our Own* was Catholicism's version of *The Gates Ajar*. This consisted of a series of letters intended to provide solace for a bereaved mother who had lost a child by assuring her of reunion in the next life with family and friends, and of friendship with the angels. While Blot did not ignore the vision of God as the essence of beatitude, he mined the lives of the saints and the writings of the Church Fathers for testimony to the certainty of reunion in heaven. 'This certainty of a special reunion with our relations in a blessed eternity is a consolation so pure and so sweet, that the saints themselves have made it the subject of their delight.'[85] Blot did not follow Swedenborg or Phelps down the path of us all becoming angels, although we will occupy thrones in the angelic choirs left behind by fallen angels. But he did strongly hint that baptised infants would become 'little angels.'[86] The idea of infant angels remains theologically unorthodox both in Protestantism and Catholicism. But it still continues to find popular support as a consolation among those bereaved by the loss of a child on this side of the grave.

Elizabeth Stuart Phelps's *The Gates Ajar* also reflected new relationships between people and animals. Phelps was open to the notion that people would be reunited with their companion animals in heaven. To the question of whether animals have souls, 'I never should have had the heart to say no to that,' she declared.[87] This was not such an original idea as it may seem. Certainly, the weight of the Western philosophical tradition was on the side of those who, emphasising the radical qualitative distinction between the human and animal realms and viewing the former as having divinely decreed authority over the latter, denied the immortality of animals. Aristotle, Augustine and Aquinas had ruled against animals having rational souls. This perspective was only increased in the seventeenth century by Descartes's view of nature as dead. This relegated animals to the status of nothing more than machines. Yet, during this same century, the developing practice of keeping pets led to new understandings of the connections between people and animals.[88] It became progressively more difficult to conceive how happiness in heaven could be complete in the absence of animals who had loved and been loved so much.

Faith in a just and loving God was also much tried by the sufferings of animals in this present life having no compensation in a future one. Ironically perhaps, the decline of belief in the natural immortality of the human soul in the nineteenth century served to open up immortality to those never before conceived to have had the chance of it. Thus, in removing any absolute distinction between men and animals, Darwin's account of evolution served to exacerbate the problem of animal immortality. For granted that men had evolved from animals, either all had immortal souls or none had. Science and sentimentality now combined in favour of the animals. The parson-naturalist and popular science writer the Reverend J. G. Wood (1827–89) set out to minimise the differences between humans and animals. For him, both revelation and reason pointed to a life after death for animals. Thus, he concluded his study *Man and Beast: Here and Hereafter* by claiming for animals 'a future life in which they can be compensated for the sufferings which so many of them have to undergo in this world'. He did so by decisively breaking with the mechanistic view of nature. 'I do so chiefly,' he continued, 'because I am quite sure that most of the cruelties which are perpetrated on the animals are due to the habit of considering them as mere machines, without susceptibilities, without reason, and without the capacity of a future.'[89]

Technologies of the afterlife

In the middle of the nineteenth century, the spirits themselves decided that, rather than us seeking them out in their homes, they would seek us out in ours by 'manifesting' themselves to us (see Plate 30 [BW]). They did so in a bewildering variety of ways, as William Lloyd Garrison discovered when he attended a seance (sitting) conducted by a 12-year-old girl in 1867:

> Bells ringing over the heads of the circle, floating in the air, and dropping upon the table; a spirit hand seen to extinguish the light; spirit hands touching the hands or garments of all present; pocket books taken out of pockets, the money abstracted, and then returned; watches removed in the same manner; the contents of one table conveyed by an invisible power from one end of the parlor to another; the bosoms of ladies partially unbuttoned, and articles thrust therein and taken therefrom; powerful rappings on the table and floor [...] a basket, containing artificial oranges and lemons, emptied, and its contents distributed around the circle, and the basket put successfully upon the head of everyone present in a grotesque manner; striking and tickling of persons by spirit hands – etc., etc.[90]

The beginnings of spiritualism are often dated to 31 March 1848, when the Fox family of Hydesville, New York, claimed to have communicated with spirits that were the cause of the mysterious rappings that had been heard in the house into which they had moved in December of the previous year.[91] Within the next several years, the three Fox sisters, Margaret, Kate and Leah, were hailed as the leading figures in a new mass movement that promoted communication with the world of the spirits. By 1851, it was estimated that there were 100 mediums in New York City and 50 to 60 'private circles' in Philadelphia.[92]

Seances undoubtedly provided consolation to those who received a message from a deceased loved one. But they served a variety of other functions. They provided entertainment for the curious; they provoked frissons of horror for the believer, moments of amusement for the sceptic and phenomena to be explained for the scientist. They continually crossed the boundary between the religious and the secular. For the conservative Christian, to attend a seance was to dabble with the Devil. For the more credulous and adventurous, this was perhaps part of their attraction. But they also appealed to those of a liberal faith and of no faith at all.

While the activities of the Fox sisters undoubtedly led to the popularisation of such manifestations, communication with the spirits was part of a long tradition that went back to the biblical story of the Witch of Endor conjuring the spirit of Samuel for King Saul (1 Sam. 28.7–20). The manifestations within spiritualism form part of the history of ghosts. That said, spiritualism was also heir to more recent events. Thus, for example, communications with the recently departed, along with accompanying 'physical' phenomena, were reported among Swedenborgian circles as early as the 1780s. In 1776, at seances in Copenhagen, it was reported that a light used to appear 'with a phosphorous appearance, which [gave] precise answers to questions posed to it, by two signs, one of which meant yes and the other no'.[93] The German Friederike Hauffe (1801–29), the so-called 'Seeress of Prevorst', entered trances in which she communicated with the dead, who manifested with knocks, raps and flying furniture. And, as we noted above, Andrew Jackson Davis, the Poughkeepsie seer, was receiving his information from the 'other side' well before the Fox sisters. Both he and the Swedenborgians disapproved of popular spiritualism, not least because, by democratising communication with the spirits, it diminished the uniqueness of their respective philosophies. After all, if mediumship was open to everyone, its value was correspondingly lessened. Be that as it may, women jumped at the opportunity to become active specialists in the sacred even if they were still only the passive vessels of the world of the spirits.[94]

Still, spiritualism did adopt most of the features of the modern social afterlife and promulgated them. Hell was non-existent and heaven was available to everyone. The spiritualist afterlife was very much a continuation of this one. We would all be recognisably the same people, our spiritual bodies very much like our physical bodies, with all imperfections removed. The heavenly landscape would be a more perfect version of that left behind on earth. Spiritual and moral progress towards perfection in heaven would continue from where it had been left on earth. The spiritualist magazine, the *Banner of Light*, insisted in 1857 that spiritualism

> conjures up no awful visions of the future, of burning lakes and pitfalls [...] It tells of an eternal progression in all that is bright and pure, and beautiful, until the soul becomes a part of the glorious harmony of God.[95]

Within spiritualism as within the social heaven more generally, God played a minimal role. Life was lived in the here and now, not under the eye of God,

but under the close scrutiny of the dead. As R. Laurence Moore neatly puts it: 'God as a fearsome judge abdicated completely his role as an enforcer of morality in favour of an assorted set of relatives hovering about sixty miles out beyond the earth's atmosphere.'[96]

Beyond this, spiritualism was an amorphous movement and developed no fixed creed. Its core beliefs were really only twofold: first, that the individual soul survived death; second, that the dead were able to communicate with the living. As the declaration from a spiritualists' convention in 1859 put it:

> We recognise as Spiritualists [...] all who hold to the one fact that human spirits have a conscious personal existence after the death of their physical bodies, and can and do manifest themselves, and do communicate to those in the body, under suitable conditions. Beyond this, on questions of philosophy, morals, theology, reform, etc., we profess no full agreement and take no responsibility for each other's opinions.[97]

Not only did spiritualism not have any opinions on such matters, it had little interest in them. The poet Elizabeth Barrett Browning (1806–61) was an early supporter of spiritualism when it reached England in 1852. She was convinced of the reality of the spirit world. But like many others, she was far more interested in the fact that there were spirits than in the often trite and insignificant messages that they brought. She would probably have thought the same about that heir of the nineteenth-century medium, the twentieth-century 'channeller'. 'As to the spirits,' she wrote in a letter in March 1853,

> I care less about what they are capable of communicating, than of the fact of there being communications. I certainly wouldn't set about building a system of theology out of their oracles – God forbid. They seem abundantly foolish, one must admit.[98]

In July 1855, she and her husband, the poet Robert Browning (1812–89), had a seance with the renowned Scottish medium D. D. Home (1833–86). Robert Browning was convinced that Home was a complete fraud. Elizabeth, on the other hand, was further confirmed in her beliefs: 'The medium [in trance],' she wrote in a letter shortly afterwards, 'talked a great deal of much such twaddle as may be heard in any fifth rate [Nonconformist] conventicle. But according to my theory [...] it does not militate at all

against the general facts.'[99] It was, after all, the medium and not the message that mattered.

By virtue of the emphasis on manifestations of the spirits that could not only be heard but also be seen and touched, spiritualists saw the world of the spirits as, in principle, open to 'scientific' enquiry. This was a religion that could be scientifically proven. In part, this was because the belief that there was a necessary conflict between religion and science was yet to become part of the intellectual discourse of the time. The result of this was that spiritualism could be both a 'religion' and an object of 'scientific' enquiry. In part, it was because the boundaries between what might be construed as 'mainstream' and 'orthodox' science on the one hand and 'pseudo-' or 'heterodox' sciences on the other were yet to be constructed. In part too it reflected the recognition that 'science' was increasingly being perceived as the final arbiter of truth, and that anything that was to be taken seriously had to be subsumable under that category in one way or another.[100]

For the spiritualist scientist, this was a quest to bring the phenomena of the spirit into the realm of the natural, or rather, to extend the realm of the natural into the realm of the spirit. It was the quest for immortality adapted to an age of science. For such spiritualist science, the boundary between the natural and the spiritual became more fluid, and the distinction between matter and the soul more blurred. Spiritualists, declared the *British Spiritual Telegraph* in 1859, have realised that natural law is

> of far wider scope than had hitherto been imagined – as extending to, and pervading the spiritual universe, as linking together many planes, many graduated systems of life and intellect, into a whole, grander and higher, teaching than had yet been dreamt of by philosophy.[101]

As for those scientists who vehemently opposed it and set about to debunk it, crass materialists that they were thought to be, they were not gifted with the requisite spiritual sight. 'Slowly, but certainly,' colourfully declared James H. Powell, the editor of the *Spiritual Times*, in 1864, 'the mist of materialism is clearing before the dawn of a new sun – the sun of Spiritualism […] The old ideas of ghostly appearances wear new forms and come to us up out of the dust of ages.'[102]

Some scientists at least were sufficiently sympathetic and interested in 1882 to form the Society for Psychical Research, 'to examine examine [mesmeric, psychical and spiritualistic phenomena] without prejudice or

prepossession of any kind, and in the same spirit of exact and unimpassioned inquiry which has enabled Science to solve so many problems, once not less obscure nor less hotly debated.'[103] Without putting too fine a point on it and to the great disappointment of many spiritualists, evidence for the existence of the spirit world was not forthcoming, although plentiful evidence of mediumistic trickery and chicanery was. Eventually, 'spirit' was to disappear from its purview and it would focus its attention only on the 'paranormal'.

Others of a scientific inclination would have nothing whatever to do with what they considered mystical mumbo-jumbo. The naturalist and Darwinian Thomas Henry Huxley (1825–95; Plate 31 [BW]), for example, refused an invitation from the Dialectical Society to join them in an investigation of spiritualism because the instance of it with which he was familiar 'was as gross an imposture as ever came under my notice.'[104] About the existence of immortality, he was as agnostic as he was about the existence of God. The required evidence for belief was absent in both cases. Even if spiritualist phenomena were genuine, he had no interest: 'The only good that I can see in the demonstration of "Spiritualism"', he derisively remarked, 'is to furnish an additional argument against suicide. Better live a crossing-sweeper than die and be made to talk twaddle by a "medium" hired at a guinea a séance.'[105]

Others besides scientists took a more active interest in exposing what they took to be the activities of frauds and charlatans. Magicians were more adept at spotting the tricks than scientists. The magician Harry Houdini (1874–1926) certainly was. He had always been interested in spiritualism, although he became progressively more sceptical about its claims. With a significant increase of interest in contacting those who had perished on the battlefields of World War I, spiritualism surged in popularity in the 1920s. Houdini crusaded vigorously during this period against fraudulent mediums: 'I believe the work I am doing,' he told a reporter, 'is the greatest humanitarian achievement of my life [...] I am helping to alleviate the years of worry that is driving many to the brink of insanity by their inordinate desire to communicate with the dead.'[106]

Twentieth-century variations, new themes and old

The emergence of the modern social heaven and the spiritualist technologies that confirmed it were the last major innovations in the history of

the afterlife in the West. This is not to argue that eschatology no longer played a significant role in modern religious life. But it is to suggest that the twentieth century witnessed an ever-increasing array of conflicting visions of the afterlife, in keeping with the increasing cultural pluralism of the West.

In part, this was the consequence of the ongoing rift between the certainties of Swedenborg and the uncertainties of Kant and the consequent differences between elite and popular views of eternity that these generated. Immortality may have survived (just) the Kantian test of reason, but nothing could be known about the afterlife. As the German liberal Protestant David Friedrich Strauss (1808–74) remarked in 1842, the Kantian view had become that of the educated believer. The modern mind, he declared, 'leaves, without showing particular emotion, the complete inventory of ecclesiastical eschatology to be burnt at the stake of criticism, content with rescuing for itself the mere survival of death'.[107] By contrast, Swedenborg, at least in principle, opened to all the possibility of gaining a new knowledge of things eternal, not through recourse to reason or Scripture but through personally validated experience of the other side beyond the gates of death.

Thomas Huxley's indifference and agnosticism about the afterlife was one outcome of the Kantian turn. Charles Darwin's was another. In his autobiography, Darwin wrote of how once, while standing in the midst of the grandeur of a Brazilian forest, he was 'convinced that there is more in man than the mere breath of his body'. But, he continued, 'now the grandest scenes would not cause any such convictions and feelings to rise in my mind.'[108] On immortality as on the existence of God, he, like his friend Huxley, was to declare himself agnostic.

At the turn of the twentieth century, Darwinian agnosticism was to segue, in the face of scientific materialism, into philosophical certainty. The German Darwinist Ernst Haeckel (1834–1919), for example, had no doubts that science had rendered invalid any claims for personal immortality, or 'athanatism', as he called it. Thus, in his bestselling 1899 work *Die Welträthsel* [*sic*] (The riddle of the universe), he concluded his chapter on the immortality of the soul by concluding: 'The belief in the immortality of the human soul is a dogma which is in hopeless contradiction with the most solid empirical truths of modern science.'[109] He believed that the most plausible ground for belief in immortality was the hope that we would be reunited with friends and family, but he was not unaware of some of the more practical impediments to its realisation: 'It is more than questionable,' he wrote, 'whether Henry VIII would like the prospect of living eternally

with his six wives; or Augustus the Strong of Poland, who had a hundred mistresses and wives and three hundred and fifty-two children.'[110]

In contrast to materialist certainties, Kantian uncertainty was to play a key role in twentieth-century liberal theology's reluctance to say much at all about the afterlife. The nineteenth century's reticence about hell had now become a virtual silence about heaven as well. Eschatological questions, as the Protestant theologian Jürgen Moltmann (1926–) put it, 'have dried up like fish in a drained pond'.[111] Within liberal theology, the meaning of life was not to be found after it, but during it, through radically transformed individuals (in existentialist theologies) or radically transformed society (in liberation theologies). As the leading feminist theologian Rosemary Ruether (1936–) summed it up:

> We can do nothing about the 'immortal' dimension of our lives. It is not our calling to be concerned about the eternal meaning of our lives [...] Our responsibility is to use our temporal life span to create a just and good community for our generation and for our children.[112]

In short, the search for the meaning of life was replaced by the quest for meaning in life.

The God-centred heaven too was transferred from the afterlife to the present. To the question 'What happens after death?' Karl Rahner (1904–84), arguably the twentieth century's most influential Catholic theologian, answered: 'Absolutely nothing.' Rahner invoked that distinction between two forms of eternity that we distinguished in Chapter 3: between an eternity defined as a succession of moments extending into an infinite future and an eternity outside of time. According to Rahner, the dead have only this latter form of eternity. When we speak of the dead who live, he declared, 'We do not mean that "things go on" after death, as though we only changed horses, as Feuerbach puts it, and rode on.'[113] Rather, as a state outside of time, it can be achieved 'in time'. Eternity, he wrote, 'is not an immeasurably long-lasting mode of pure time, but a mode of the spirit and freedom which are fulfilled in time'.[114] We meet the living dead, concluded Rahner, not in the seances of the spiritualists but

> when we open our hearts to the silent calm of God himself, in which they [the dead] live; not by calling them back [like the spiritualists] to where we are, but by descending into the silent eternity of our own hearts, and

> through faith in the risen Lord, creating in time the eternity which they have brought forth for ever.[115]

In twentieth-century Protestant and Catholic theology, at least on the liberal side, the afterlife had become an afterthought. The reluctance of elite theologies to say anything about the afterlife (or little of substance compared to earlier times), together with the democratisation of spirituality, led to the emergence in that century of an array of popular theories and practices, from the this-worldly to the other-worldly, filling the gap left by an agnostic or at least reticent elite.

From here to eternity

Like the nineteenth, the twentieth century continued to narrow the gap between this life and the next. Emblematic of this narrowing is the modern American cemetery. Here the architecture of the modern heaven is replicated on earth. The body lives in a space that mimics the place of the soul. Soul and body, heaven and earth are aligned. An earthly Eden reflects its heavenly counterpart. The cemetery now becomes a place not of sorrow but of joy, a site to celebrate life lived and life continuing. Its most famous instance? Forest Lawn Memorial Park in Glendale, California. The 1917 dream of its founder Hubert Eaton (1881–1966) is inscribed in stone adjacent to the entrance to the Great Mausoleum: 'I believe in a happy eternal life,' he there declares. 'I believe those of us who are left behind,' he continued,

> should be glad in the certain belief that those gone before […] have entered into that happier life […] I therefore know the cemeteries of today are wrong, because they depict an end, not a beginning […] I shall endeavour to build Forest Lawn as different, as unlike other cemeteries as sunshine is unlike darkness, as Eternal Life is unlike Death […] a great park. Devoid of misshapen monuments and other customary signs of earthly Death, but filled with towering trees, sweeping lawns, splashing fountains, singing birds, beautiful statuary, cheerful flowers; noble memorial architecture, with interiors of light and colour, and redolent of the world's best history and romances […] a place where lovers new and old shall love to stroll and watch the sunset's glow […] where school teachers bring happy children.[116]

It was a combination of 'paganism, spiritualism, Swedenborgianism, and infantile optimism' that all turned out pretty much as Eaton had hoped.[117] This was the Disneyland of death that Evelyn Waugh (1903–66) was to satirise in his novel *The Loved One* (1948). There too, the memorial park, Whispering Glades, has the dream of its founder Wilbur Kenilworth sculptured in marble. In his dream, the 'narrow sea' that Isaac Watts saw dividing this 'heavenly land from ours' has now become merely a 'narrow stream': 'I saw the Waiting Ones,' declared Kenilworth,

> who still stood at the brink of that narrow stream that now separated them from those who had gone before. Young and old, they were happy too. Happy in Beauty, Happy in the certain knowledge that their loved ones were very near, in Beauty and Happiness such as the earth cannot give.[118]

The modern social heaven is essentially a vigorous assertion of the importance of individuals and of their personal relationships. The modern afterlife is, however, not always a matter of individual immortality, but on occasion one of final absorption into the divine (or the recognition that the self and the divine are one). This is a view that can be traced back through the traditions of Christian mysticism to the Neoplatonism of the third century. Be that as it may, it has had its impact in modern Western consciousness as a result of that creative synthesis between Eastern and Western mystical traditions known as 'the perennial philosophy'. Popularised by the English writer Aldous Huxley (1894–1963) in his 1945 book of the same name, the perennial philosophy was based on the notion that truth is manifested in many forms, but it flows from a single fountain. For Huxley, this amounted to the view that the essence of each individual (soul) was equivalent to the essence of the universe (God): 'the Atman, or immanent eternal Self is one with Brahman, the Absolute Principle of all existence; and the last end of every human being is to discover this fact for himself, to find out Who he really is.'[119]

The perennial philosophy advocated by Huxley was not the Western *philosophia perennis* grounded in Neoplatonism[120] but the late nineteenth-century neo-Advaita Hindu tradition of Swami Vivekananda (1863–1902), itself an attempt to impose on the multiplicity of religious traditions in India an underlying philosophical unity. In this tradition, the mystical experience of personal identity with God in this life foreshadows the liberation of the individual at death from individual consciousness. For Huxley, then, the

afterlife did not have to do with 'a happy posthumous condition of indefinite personal survival'. Those who have accepted the perennial philosophy

> aspire to be delivered out of separate selfhood in time and into eternity as realized in the unitive knowledge of the divine Ground. Since the Ground can and ought to be known in the present life […] 'heaven' is not an exclusively posthumous condition. He only is completely 'saved' who is delivered here and now.[121]

Within the Indian traditions, liberation from this world of Samsara only occurs after an infinite series of reincarnations within this world. Thus, there is, as it were, an infinite number of afterlives in the future (as in the past) before liberation finally and mercifully brings them to an end. Thus, in the Indian traditions, reincarnation is the great horror from which freedom is sought. But within the modern West, reincarnation operates in a different register. The sequence of lives is not so much to be escaped from as to be embraced as a series of ongoing opportunities for progress, learning and growth. In this sense, it is a 'this-worldly' variation on those opportunities for progress provided by the 'other-worldly' social heaven. Thus, Western reincarnation synthesises Eastern understandings of the infinite cycle of birth and rebirth with Western ideals of spiritual progress. Not so much the wheel of Samsara as an ever-upwards spiral. This synthesis reaches back to the late nineteenth century Theosophical Society of Helena Blavatsky (1831–91). Thus, in her *Isis Unveiled* (1877), she wrote: 'If the Pythagorean metempsychosis [reincarnation] should be thoroughly explained and compared with the modern [Darwinian] theory of evolution, it would be found to supply every "missing link" in the chain of the latter.'[122]

It is also to Madame Blavatsky that the modern Western awareness of karma is owed. For her, this was the natural law that underlay all spiritual progress. Crucially, it both provided an explanation of why in this life bad things happen to good people (or the reverse) and obviated the necessity for a divine recompense (or punishment) in the next. In this balancing out of the good and the evil, God has become redundant. As one of the 'Ramala Masters' puts it:

> Karma is the eastern name for the Law which you in the West call Cause and Effect and which I call Equalisation. What you have sown, what you have done in thought, word and deed has an effect and that effect will in

> turn be felt by you. It is as simple as that. What you have done not only in this life but also in your many previous lives has had an effect on the pool of life, and when you step into that pool you will be affected by the ripples that you have created both now and in the past [...] The purpose of karma is not punishment. It is rather a process of balance and education.[123]

On 21 September 1920, Sir Arthur Conan Doyle (1859–1930), the celebrated author of the Sherlock Holmes stories, arrived in Adelaide, South Australia. As a proud South Australian myself, I note that he described Adelaide as one of few cities 'so pretty, so orderly and so self-sufficing'.[124] Adelaide was the first official stop on a four-month tour of Australia and New Zealand to promote spiritualism. As early as 1887, Doyle had put himself on the public record as a student of psychic matters, and he had become a member of the Society for Psychical Research in the early 1890s. It was during this period that he was to become more and more impressed by the spiritualist position. Although he was later to lose faith in Madame Blavatsky, he was also around this time deeply interested in theosophy, which 'presented a very well thought-out and reasonable scheme, parts of which, notably reincarnation and karma, seemed to offer an explanation for some of the anomalies of life'.[125] By the time he had arrived in Australia, he had become a passionate evangelist for spiritualism. Like many others who had lost loved ones in the Great War of 1914–18 and the subsequent Spanish flu (his own son having survived the war but succumbed to influenza), he was drawn to the proofs spiritualism offered of life after death and he was eager to embrace the opportunity it gave to communicate with those nearest and dearest – and departed.

So it was to an audience of 2,000 people in the grandly Victorian Adelaide Town Hall that Doyle delivered his lecture on Saturday 25 September 1920 'on a subject which concerns the destiny of every man and woman in this room'.[126] Elsewhere, he was vividly to depict the afterlife as it had been gleaned from communications from the other side:

> The information we have depicts a heaven of congenial work and of congenial play, with every mental and physical activity of life carried on to a higher plane – a heaven of art, of science, of intellect, of organization, of combat with evil, of home circles, of flowers, of wide travel, of sports, of the mating of souls, of complete harmony. This is what our 'dead' friends describe.[127]

When the truth of spiritualism was recognised, he believed, the result would be, quite simply, peace on earth and goodwill between all men – an earthly utopia, but one continually in touch with its heavenly counterpart.

For Doyle, the spirits of the dead were part of a larger world of spiritual beings that included fairies. His interest was particularly piqued when he heard, in May 1920, while in the midst of planning his Australian trip, that five photographs of fairies had been taken by two cousins, Elsie Wright and Frances Griffiths, who lived in the village of Cottingley in West Yorkshire. The first two photographs had come to public attention in mid-1919 when they were displayed at the Theosophical Society's annual conference in Harrogate, Yorkshire. The leading Theosophist Edward Gardner saw the girls' capacity to see fairies as a sign of the evolving new consciousness that the theosophists were prophesying:

> [T]he fact that two young girls [...] had not only been able to see fairies, which others had done, but had actually for the first time ever been able to materialise them at a density sufficient for their images to be recorded on a photographic plate, meant that it was possible that the next cycle of evolution was underway.[128]

Doyle was writing an article on fairies for the *Strand Magazine* when, fortuitously, he heard of the photographs. He and Gardner were soon collaborating on the story. Having gained permission from Elsie and her father, Doyle included the two photographs in his article (see Plate 33 [BW]). In spite of his doubts, he had a determination to believe in the validity of the photos, not least because they bore witness to the 'new world' of spirits that he believed was on the verge of discovery. 'When Columbus knelt in prayer upon the edge of America,' he concluded,

> what prophetic eye saw all that a new continent might do to affect the destinies of the world? We also seem to be on the edge of a new continent, separated not by oceans but by subtle and surmountable psychic conditions.[129]

For the sceptics, and there were many, Doyle was only metaphorically and definitely not literally 'off with the fairies'. They would have agreed with the sentiments of Max Weber in his 1918 lecture that the rise of science had led to 'the disenchantment of the world' ('*die Entzauberung der Welt*').[130] As Michael Saler puts it, 'disenchantment' entailed the loss of the 'overarching

meanings, animistic connections, magical expectations, and spiritual explanations' that had characterised the pre-modern world.[131] A disenchanted world may have resonated among the elites. But Doyle was in the vanguard of a twentieth-century re-enchantment of the world or, rather, the recollection of a spiritual world that had never really disappeared among the hoi polloi but had only been marginalised by the elites since the middle of the eighteenth century, in spite of the protests of the Romantics of the nineteenth century.

This re-enchantment of the world was the consequence of the closing of the gap within modern popular culture between this life and the next, between this world and the other world. The connection between the two is the key theme in the film *Photographing Fairies* (1997), directed by Nick Willing. It tells the story of a sceptical and world-weary photographer, Charles Castle (see Plate 34 [BW]), who has lost his new bride in a mountaineering accident shortly after his wedding day. As sceptical about the afterlife as he is about the other world, he attends a lecture at the Theosophical Society at which he debunks a picture of the Cottingley fairies, in spite of Arthur Conan Doyle's declaration to the audience that the fairies are exiles from heaven and dwell on 'the borderland between this world and a better one'. Subsequently, he himself is converted from unbelief after experiencing and photographing fairies at 'the great tree' in the Birkenwell Woods. This 'isn't the only world', he concludes: 'There is another world, as close to this one as I am to you.' The film ends with his reunion with his wife in the other world. Here 'science' (in the form of photography) has turned from its role as the master of disenchantment to that of the servant of re-enchantment.

Enchanted worlds now abound alongside a disenchanted one. Boundary riders and border crossers have proliferated, both good and evil: fairies, but also vampires, witches and wizards, werewolves and wraiths, shape-shifters and superheroes, angels and aliens, demons and zombies. Tolkien's (1892–1973) Endor (Middle-earth) is populated with the angelic Ainur, Elves, Dwarves, Hobbits, Ents, Orcs and Trolls. C. S. Lewis's (1898–1963) Narnia is populated by humans, talking animals and assorted creatures – dwarves, centaur, cruels, dragons, giants, fauns, fairies and nymphs, ghouls, incubi, marsh-wiggles, merpeople, werewolves, and so on. Around 100 fantastic and exotic creatures live in the imaginary world of Harry Potter.

In Ursula Le Guin's (1929–) world of Earthsea, the good wizards, like Taoist sages, live in harmony with the world, while bad wizards always threaten to upset the balance. But her land of the dead – the dark, changeless Dry Land – unlike the modern afterlife, references the Greek Hades

and the Hebrew Sheol with echoes of the tenth of Rilke's *Duino Elegies*. The Dry Land is not a place where punishment and reward are allocated according to vice and virtue. Regardless, all the dead are gathered together in that vast realm. Like Hades, the Dry Land is a place of gloom where the sun neither rises nor sets and the unmoving stars cast only a dim light. The country of the innumerable dead is empty: 'No tree or thorn or blade of grass grew in the stony earth under the unsetting stars.'[132] There the dead stand still or move slowly with no purpose. They are to be pitied but not feared. The young prince Arren

> saw the mother and child who had died together, and they were in the dark land together; but the child did not run, nor did it cry, and the mother did not hold it, nor even look at it. And those who had died for love passed each other in the streets.[133]

Utopias new and apocalypses old

In an age in which we have the capacity to bring about the end of humanity and the planet, to bring to reality the mythical images of an end to the earth through fire or flood, the Dry Land is as much the image of a post-apocalyptic world as it is of a post-mortem realm – a place without meaning, pattern or hope. Thus, the Dry Land of Le Guin is of a piece with the gloomy (presumably) post-nuclear, ash-covered earth of Cormac McCarthy's (1933–) *The Road*, along which a man and his son push their shopping trolley of meagre possessions, seeking a warmer place. It is a journey across a bare landscape towards nothing hopeful, even if it is carried out in hope. The sun barely shines, the only food is tinned or other humans, and mummified corpses are stuck in the tar of the road that melted beneath them as they tried to escape.

This is a world that proclaims the non-existence of God. When the man and the boy encounter Ely (Elijah?), in an inversion of the Muslim confession of faith he tells them, 'There is no God and we are his prophets.'[134] There is no way back to the world as it once was, one of meaning and pattern – and perhaps of design. Thus, the book's concluding paragraph:

> Once there were brook trout in the streams in the mountains. You could see them standing in the amber current where the white edges of their

> fins wimpled softly in the flow [...] On their backs were vermiculate patterns that were maps of the world in its becoming. Maps and mazes. Of a thing which could not be put back. Not be made right again. In the deep glens where they lived all things were older than man and they hummed of mystery.[135]

Such a post-apocalyptic world signals the end of history, and renders it meaningless. The only things that have meaning are human relationships as exemplified in that between the father and his son. These survive even death. After his father dies, the boy is taken in by another family. Sometimes, we read, the woman in this family would talk to him about God. He 'tried to talk to God but the best thing was to talk to his father and he did talk to him and he didn't forget'.[136] It is an immortality of a sort – to live on in the memories of loved ones left behind, one that many in the modern world embrace – but a pretty poor one for all that.

Such dystopian pessimism finds its contrast in utopian optimism. There remains the belief that humanity as a whole is not so much on the eve of destruction as at the dawn of an ever-ascending evolutionary path of progress. This explains, within the theosophical tradition, how a heavenly utopia on earth can eventually be created. The theosophists saw this as a long-term project over thousands, even millions, of years. But others believed that a new human consciousness that would lead to an earthly Paradise was imminent. The dawning of the Age of Aquarius, the beginning of the New Age, was now! Thus, for example, in 1980, Marilyn Ferguson (1938–2008) presented her manifesto for a radical transformation of human society as the consequence of the cultivation of the radical transformation of individual human consciousness:

> Those who believe in the possibility of impending social transformation are not optimistic about human nature; rather they trust the transformative process itself. Having experienced positive change in their own lives [...] they concede that others may change, too. And they believe that if enough individuals discover new capacities in themselves they will naturally conspire to create a world hospitable to human imagination, growth, and cooperation.[137]

Arguably the most influential source of the idea of the human consciousness evolving towards an eschatological end point was the Jesuit priest,

philosopher and palaeontologist Pierre Teilhard de Chardin (1881–1955). In his *Le phénomène humain* (*The Phenomenon of Man*), posthumously published in the year of his death, Teilhard viewed evolution as a process leading from the single cell to the thinking animal, and thence to human consciousness in ever-increasing complexity. The emergence of man was a new stage in evolutionary consciousness. Man, declared Teilhard, 'discovers *he is nothing else than evolution become conscious of itself*.'[138] The increase in knowledge that has accumulated, especially through the growth of science and technology, has led to the further emergence of a 'noosphere', a sphere of mind that is nothing but the collective consciousness of humanity in which we are all embedded. And in the future, the evolution of human consciousness will culminate in the 'Omega Point' (the Christ who is both Alpha and Omega), which 'fuses and consumes' all things 'integrally into itself'.[139] This is not, however, the loss of the individual in the divine, as in the Hindu neo-Advaita. Rather, it is the enrichment of the individual. This is the Christian mystic's union (but not identity) of the soul with God transposed into a grand history of cosmic evolution. This is Christian Hegelianism gone viral. The conclusion is inevitable, Teilhard wrote,

> that the concentration of a conscious universe would be unthinkable if it did not reassemble in itself *all consciousnesses* as well as all *the conscious*; each particular consciousness remaining conscious of itself at the end of the operation, and even [...] each particular consciousness becoming still more itself and thus more clearly distinct from others the closer it gets to them in Omega.[140]

Christ as the end point of the process of history has continued to play a role in the expectations of twentieth-century conservative Protestant Christians. Their hopes are dominated not so much by our becoming Christ as by his coming to us, more specifically, by the expectation of his imminent return and his reign on a utopian earth that will last for a thousand years prior to the Last Judgement. The pre-eminence of this view within the last 40 years can be traced to the popular impact of a bestselling non-fiction book of the 1970s, the American evangelist Hal Lindsey's (1929–) *The Late Great Planet Earth* (1970). God's Kingdom on earth will be a Paradise restored,

> characterized by peace and equity, and by universal spirituality and knowledge of the Lord. Even the animals and reptiles will lose their ferocity

> and no longer be carnivorous […] The Great Society which human rulers throughout the centuries have promised, but never produced, will at last be realized under Christ's rule. The meek and not the arrogant will inherit the earth.[141]

Eschatological expectations of the imminent end of the world through the hand of God are part of a grand historical narrative, replete with meaning, harmony, symmetry and purpose – the unfolding of a divine plan determined at the creation of the world and laid out in the Bible from Genesis to Revelation. This was what Hal Lindsey's apocalyptic vision tapped into. It is an eschatological scenario that continues to resonate among Conservative evangelical Protestants. Thus, the life of believers, grounded in the events of the past and determined by the events of the future, has meaning in the present. This is both by virtue of the life assured immediately after death through the cross and resurrection of Christ, and also as a result of the special place occupied by each person within the story of history – a history that begins with the creation of the world, proceeds through Fall to redemption and culminates in the Last Judgement. Then the righteous will become part of the heavenly kingdom and the wicked will be doomed to an eternity of punishment in the domain of the lost. Unlike the unbelievers, the believers know this and live by it. Unbelievers don't, and perish without it. For unlike the unbelievers, the believers have read the biblical script. They alone know how the drama will end. Only they have any assurance of salvation. And they are few rather than many, or so they believe.

Thus has Western eschatology turned full circle. With the expectation of the imminent coming of the Kingdom of God and the final return of Christ, the disappointed eschatological hopes of the earliest Christians have become alive in the present, charging the present with the deepest meaning. Predictions of the imminent end of the world are never daunted by its failure to arrive. The hope that Christ will come again ever exceeds the disappointments of his failure thus far to arrive when expected, just as the hope that there is meaning in history and in the lives of individuals always survives any amount of evidence against it. Thus has the expectation that the end of the world is nigh, that Christ is on the verge of returning, reasserted itself in the modern world. It has done so continually at regular intervals throughout the history of Western religious thought since that day when a prophet from Nazareth appeared in Galilee, 'preaching the gospel of

the Kingdom of God, and saying, "The time is fulfilled, and the Kingdom of God is at hand; repent ye, and believe the gospel"' (Mark 1.14–15).

In contrast to this grand theological narrative of Creation, Fall, redemption and last things, modern 'secular' histories find neither meaning nor pattern in the facts, neither a divine providence outside of history overseeing all things nor a principle within it guaranteeing a point to it all. History lacks any final explanation, either from that which is outside it or from that within it. As Paul Boyer sums it up: 'With secular historians no longer speaking the language of progress or portraying the majestic unfolding of a divine plan in history, prophecy popularizers took up the slack and found a vast audience in the process.'[142]

Yet the determination to find meaning in history in spite of the apparent absence of it, to find meaning in the present despite the world's apparent disenchantment, has very recently re-emerged. In the physical sciences, it is manifest in the quest to find the unifying law of nature that would underpin all other laws. As the astrophysicist Paul Davies (1946–) puts it, the ideal would be if such a law were to be expressed in a mathematical scheme in a single and simple formula 'compact enough to wear on your T-shirt'.[143] Analogously, in the historical sciences, there has recently emerged the attempt to unite all of the scientific disciplines under a grand evolutionary history of the universe and humanity from the beginning to the present. The aim of its leading exponent, historian David Christian (1946–), is to produce 'a map of time that embraces the past at all scales'.[144] Such 'Big History' intends to construct a unified scientific account of the origin and history of all things. But it is more than this. It means to produce a 'modern creation myth' and thus to provide 'universal coordinates within which people can imagine their own existence and find a role in the larger scheme of things'. Creation myths, he writes, speak to our 'need for a sense of place and a sense of belonging'.[145] Thus Christian's Big History rediscovers the values and meaning lost from modern lives. And thus his unified account of science (in theory) makes possible a new and modern spirituality – an Aboriginal 'Dreaming' for the modern West.[146] A grand narrative of evolutionary progress provides a secularised substitute for divine providence. Secular history becomes sacred once again; or, perhaps better, the gap between secular and sacred history becomes more blurred. Secular history has been spiritualised and sacred history secularised.

So too, in this century, the gap between this life and the next is more opaque. More generally, the distinction between an enchanted and a

disenchanted world is harder to sustain intellectually. The enchanted imagination lives alongside disenchanted reason. The spaces between here and eternity, now and then, fact and fiction, the literal and the metaphorical, the religious and the magical, the rational and the imaginary are blurred. The modern world is one of multiple meanings, both enchanted and disenchanted. We can inhabit both an enchanted and a disenchanted world, a secular and a sacred history, this realm and the next, as a matter of leisure, or pleasure, or the utmost seriousness. Belief can be embraced and disbelief happily and willingly suspended.

Epilogue

In the year 627, King Edwin of Northumbria, contemplating acceptance of the Christian faith, conferred about it with his friends and counsellors. One of his chief men eloquently expressed our ignorance of our final destiny:

> The present life of man upon earth, O king, seems to me, in comparison with that time which is unknown to us, like to the swift flight of a sparrow through the house wherein you sit at supper in winter, with your ealdormen and thegns, while the fire blazes in the midst, and the hall is warmed, but the wintry storms of rain or snow are raging abroad. The sparrow, flying in at one door and immediately out at another, whilst he is within, is safe from the wintry tempest; but after a short space of fair weather, he immediately vanishes out of your sight, passing from winter into winter again. So this life of man appears for a little while, but of what is to follow or what went before we know nothing at all.[1]

That we all die, we know. But of what may lie beyond our deaths we remain, like Edwin's adviser, completely ignorant. As for myself, I expect death is one event that unfortunately I shall not live to regret, even though I live in hope that I might be pleasantly, and not unpleasantly, surprised when my life and this world is to me no more.

This book has explored the history of our imaginings about the afterlife, both after death and after the end of history. It is a testimony to the hope that most have for an extension of life beyond the grave. It speaks to the desire that many have expressed for light beyond the darkness of death, for ultimate goodness beyond present evils, and for final justice over earthly inequities. It gives voice to the faith that the drama of history, and the minor role that each of us has played in it, has an ultimate meaning and purpose, one that is discernible from the vistas of eternity if not from our present perspective. And it resonates with the confidence that St Paul had when he comforted those who despaired of this life with words of hope for a better life to come: 'For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed to us' (Rom. 8.18).

Notes

Abbreviations

ANF	Alexander Roberts, James Donaldson and A. Cleveland Coxe (eds), *Ante-Nicene Fathers*, 10 vols (Buffalo, NY: Christian Literature, 1885–97).
NPNFI	Philip Schaff (ed.), *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers: First Series*, 14 vols (Buffalo, NY: Christian Literature, 1886–90).
NPNFII	Philip Schaff and Henry Wace (eds), *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers: Second Series*, 14 vols (Buffalo, NY: Christian Literature, 1890–1900).
PL	J.-P. Migne (ed.), *Patrologia Latina*, 221 vols (Paris, 1844–64).

1. The Destiny of the Dead

1 Wojciech Kosior, 'The underworld or its ruler? Some remarks on the concept of Sheol in the Hebrew Bible', *Polish Journal of Biblical Research* 13 (2014), p. 40. See also Alan E. Bernstein, *The Formation of Hell: Death and Retribution in the Ancient and Early Christian Worlds* (Ithaca, NY, and London: Cornell University Press, 1993). I am indebted to Bernstein for this discussion.

2 Homer, *The Iliad*, trans. A. T. Murray (Cambridge, MA, and London: Harvard University Press and Heinemann, 1924), 15.187–92.

3 Walter Burkert, *Greek Religion: Archaic and Classical*, trans. John Raffan (Oxford: Blackwell, 1985), p. 196. See Homer, *Iliad*, 20.67ff.

4 Homer, *Iliad*, 23.64–75.

5 Homer, *The Odyssey*, trans. A. T. Murray (Cambridge, MA, and London: Harvard University Press and Heinemann, 1919), 24.7–8.

6 Ibid., 11.18.

7 Ibid., 24.203–4.

8 Ibid., 11.37–44.

9 Ibid., 11.217–20.

10 Ibid., 11.486–9.

11 Homer, *Iliad*, 8.14–16.

12 Homer, *Odyssey*, 11.595–8.

13 Ibid., 4.61–3.

14 Hesiod, *Works and Days* 167–73, in Hesiod, *The Homeric Hymns, and Homerica*, trans. Hugh G. Evelyn-White (London: Heinemann, 1914), p. 15.

15 George W. E. Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1: A Commentary on the Book of Enoch Chapters 1–36; 81–108* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress Press, 2001), p. 300.

16 2 Baruch 30.2–5, in James H. Charlesworth (ed.), *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*, vol. 1: *Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments* (New York, NY: Doubleday, 1983), p. 631.
17 4 Ezra 5.8, in James H. Charlesworth (ed.), *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*, vol. 1: *Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments* (New York, NY: Doubleday, 1983), p. 532. See also p. 523 for notes on Whiston, as well as Christopher Columbus, Bishop Hugh Latimer and John Milton.
18 Ibid., 7.80–1 [p. 539].
19 Ibid., 7.36–7 [p. 538].
20 Hippolytus, *Against Plato, On the Cause of the Universe* 1, trans. J. H. MacMahon, in *ANF*, vol. 5, p. 221. (*Josephus's Discourse to the Greeks Concerning Hades* is now attributed to Hippolytus and not to Josephus, and known by the title *Against Plato*.)
21 Ibid., 1 [p. 222].
22 Ibid.
23 Ibid.
24 Ibid.
25 Tertullian, *A Treatise on the Soul* 55, trans. Peter Holmes, in *ANF*, vol. 3, p. 231.
26 Ibid., 58 [p. 235].
27 Tertullian, *Against Marcion* 34, trans. Peter Holmes, in *ANF*, vol. 3, p. 406. See also Henri Crouzel, 'L'Hades et la Gehenne selon Origene', *Gregorianum* 59 (1978), p. 292.
28 *The Letters of St Augustine*, ed. W. J. Sparrow-Simpson (London and New York, NY: SPCK and Macmillan, 1919), p. 201.
29 See J. A. MacCulloch, *The Harrowing of Hell: A Comparative Study of an Early Christian Doctrine* (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1930), p. 344.
30 2 Enoch 8.1–3, in James H. Charlesworth (ed.), *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*, vol. 1: *Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments* (New York, NY: Doubleday, 1983), p. 114. It should be noted that the date of this text is much disputed, although probably no later than the first century CE.
31 The Apocalypse of Paul 14, in J. K. Elliott (ed.), *The Apocryphal New Testament: A Collection of Apocryphal Christian Literature in an English Translation* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1993), p. 624.
32 Ibid., 15 [p. 624].
33 Ibid., 16 [p. 625].
34 Ibid., 22 [p. 629].
35 Ibid., 31 [p. 633].
36 Ibid., 32 [p. 634].
37 Ibid., 41 [p. 637].
38 Ibid.
39 Ibid., 40 [p. 636].
40 Ibid., 51 [p. 674].
41 Matt. 11.23, 16.18; Luke 10.15, 16.23; Acts 2.27, 2.31; Rev. 1.18, 6.8, 20.13, 20.14.
42 With the one exception of 1 Cor. 15.55, where he used 'death' (*mors*).
43 St Jerome, *Commentary on Ecclesiastes*, ed. and trans. Richard J. Goodrich and David J. D. Miller (New York, NY, and Mahwah, NJ: Newman Press, 2012), p. 63.
44 4 Ezra 7.36, in James H. Charlesworth (ed.), *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*, vol. 1: *Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments* (New York, NY: Doubleday, 1983), p. 538.

45 Matt. 5.22, 5.29, 5.30, 10.28, 18.9, 23.15, 23.33; Mark 9.43, 9.45, 9.47; Luke 12.5; Jas. 3.6. See especially Chaim Milikowsky, 'Which Gehenna? Retribution and eschatology in the synoptic Gospels and in early Jewish texts', *New Testament Studies* 34 (1988), pp. 238–49.
46 See ibid., pp. 243–4.

2. *The Geography of the Underworld*

1 Dante, *Purgatorio*, ed. and trans. Robin Kirkpatrick (London: Penguin, 2007), 7.33.
2 Dante, *The Divine Comedy*, trans. A. S. Kline (n.p.: Poetry in Translation, 2014), 4.43. Available at http://www.poetryintranslation.com/PITBR/Italian/Danthome.htm.
3 Albert the Great, *Scriptum super sententiis* 4.1.20, quoted in Amilcare A. Iannucci, 'Dante's limbo: at the margins of orthodoxy', in James Miller (ed.), *Dante and the Unorthodox: The Aesthetics of Transgression* (Waterloo, Ontario: Wilfrid Laurier University Press, 2005), p. 76.
4 Dante, *Inferno*, ed. and trans. Robin Kirkpatrick (London: Penguin, 2006), 3.25–7.
5 Ibid., 4.26–7.
6 Ibid., 4.30.
7 Ibid., 4.37–42.
8 Ibid., 4.63.
9 On Bonaventure, see Jacques Le Goff, *The Birth of Purgatory* (Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press, 1981), pp. 250–6.
10 Thomas Aquinas, *Scriptum super sententiis* 3.22.2.1–2, quoted in Amilcare A. Iannucci, 'Dante's limbo: at the margins of orthodoxy', in James Miller (ed.), *Dante and the Unorthodox: The Aesthetics of Transgression* (Waterloo, Ontario: Wilfrid Laurier University Press, 2005), p. 77.
11 Gregory of Nyssa, *On Infants' Early Deaths*, trans. William Moore and Henry Austin Wilson, in *NPNFII*, vol. 5, pp. 372–81.
12 Ibid., pp. 374.
13 Ibid.
14 Ibid., p. 376.
15 Ibid., p. 377.
16 *Pelagius's Commentary on St Paul's Epistle to the Romans*, trans. Theodore de Bruyn (Oxford: Clarendon, 1993), p. 94. For Pelagius on original sin, see especially Pier Franco Beatrice, *The Transmission of Sin: Augustine and the Pre-Augustinian Sources*, trans. Adam Kamesar (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2013). I am indebted to Beatrice for this discussion.
17 Quoted in Augustine, *A Treatise on the Grace of Christ, and on Original Sin* 2.14, trans. Peter Holmes and Robert Ernest Wallis, rev. Benjamin B. Warfield, in *NPNFI*, vol. 5, p. 241.
18 Ibid. At least, according to Augustine, this was a statement that Caelestius was not willing to disavow.
19 Augustine, *De gratia Christi et de peccato originali*, in K. F. Urba and Joseph Zycha (eds), *Corpus scriptorum ecclesiasticorum Latinorum*, vol. 42 (Vienna: Tempsky, 1902), p. 182: '*sine baptism paruuli morientes, quo non eant, scio; quo eant nescio.*'

20 Quoted in Beatrice, *Transmission of Sin*, p. 79.
21 Augustine, *De libero arbitrio* 3, in Augustine, *On Free Choice of the Will*, trans. Thomas Williams (Indianapolis, IN: Hackett, 1993), p. 116.
22 Augustine, *Sermo* 294.16.16, in *PL*, vol. 38, col. 1345: '*Omnis generatus, damnatus: nemo liberatus, nisi regeneratus.*'
23 Augustine, *A Treatise on the Merits and Forgiveness of Sins* 1.28, trans. Peter Holmes and Robert Ernest Wallis, rev. Benjamin B. Warfield, in *NPNFI*, vol. 5, p. 25.
24 Ibid., 1.21 [p. 23].
25 Gregory the Great, *Morals on the Book of Job by St Gregory the Great, Translated with Notes and Indices*, vol. 1, trans. James Bliss (Oxford and London: John Henry Parker and J. G. F. and J. Rivington, 1844), 9.21.32.
26 Anselm, *The Virgin Conception and Original Sin* 23, in *Anselm of Canterbury*, vol. 3, ed. and trans. Jasper Hopkins and Herbert Richardson (Toronto and New York, NY: Edwin Mellen Press, 1976), p. 172.
27 Ibid., 28 [p. 178].
28 Peter Abelard, *Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*, trans. Steven Cartwright (Washington DC: Catholic University of America Press, 2012), pp. 221–2.
29 Bonaventure, *Scriptum super sententiis* 2.33.3. See Amilcare A. Iannucci, 'Dante's limbo: at the margins of orthodoxy', in James Miller (ed.), *Dante and the Unorthodox: The Aesthetics of Transgression* (Waterloo, Ontario: Wilfrid Laurier University Press, 2005), p. 79.
30 Thomas Aquinas, *Summa theologica*, appendix 1, question 2, in Thomas Aquinas, *Summa theologica*, trans. Fathers of the English Dominican Province (New York, NY: Benziger Brothers, 1947). Available at http://www.ccel.org/ccel/aquinas/summa.html. This passage was inserted into the text of the *Summa* from Aquinas's commentary on the *Sentences* of Peter Lombard.
31 Thomas Aquinas, *Quaestiones disputatae de malo*, question 5, article 3, in Thomas Aquinas, *On Evil*, trans. Richard Regan, ed. Brian Davies (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2003).
32 See J. A. MacCulloch, *The Harrowing of Hell: A Comparative Study of an Early Christian Doctrine* (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1930). See also especially Jeffrey A. Trumbower, *Rescue for the Dead: The Posthumous Salvation of Non-Christians in Early Christianity* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2001).
33 William Joseph Dalton, *Christ's Proclamation to the Spirits: A Study of I Peter 3:18–4.6* (Rome: Pontificio Istituto Biblico, 1989). Dalton notes that, in spite of the very early tradition of Christ's descent into hell, Clement of Alexandria (*c.*150–*c.*215 CE) was the first to link this tradition to 1 Pet. 3.19. See p. 32.
34 The dating of the Gospel of Nicodemus, from the first century CE onwards, has been much disputed. See G. C. O'Ceallaigh, 'Dating the commentaries of Nicodemus', *Harvard Theological Review* 56 (1963), pp. 21–58.
35 See M. R. James (ed. and trans.), *The Apocryphal New Testament* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1953), p. 95.
36 The Gospel of Nicodemus [Greek] 18.2, in M. R. James (ed. and trans.), *The Apocryphal New Testament* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1953), p. 126.
37 Ibid., 21.3 [p. 134].
38 Ibid., 24.1 [p. 138].
39 Ibid., 27.1 [p. 143]. The Gospel of Nicodemus was the first to name the two thieves crucified with Christ: Dismas, crucified to Jesus's right, and Gestas, to his left.

40 The Gospel of Nicodemus [Latin B] 24, in M. R. James (ed. and trans.), *The Apocryphal New Testament* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1953), pp. 135–6.
41 Ibid., 26 [p. 139].
42 Ibid., 25.2 [p. 139].
43 Irenaeus, *Against Heresies* 1.27.3, trans. Alexander Roberts and William Rambaut, in *ANF*, vol. 1, p. 352.
44 Ibid.
45 Ibid., 4.27.2 [p. 499].
46 Clement, *Stromata* 6.6, trans. William Wilson, in *ANF*, vol. 2, p. 491.
47 Ibid., 6.6 [p. 490].
48 Origen, *Against Celsus* 2.43, trans. Frederick Crombie, in *ANF*, vol. 4, p. 448.
49 Henri Crouzel, 'L'Hades et la Gehenne selon Origene', *Gregorianum* 59 (1978).
50 Augustine, Letter 163, trans. J. G. Cunningham, in *NPNFI*, vol. 1, p. 515. For Augustine on the descent into hell, see Basil Studer, 'Der Abstieg Christi in die Unterwelt bei Augustinus von Hippo', in I. Scicolone (ed.), *Psallendum: miscellanea di studi in onore del Prof. Jordi Pinelli i Pons, OSB* (Rome: Pontificio Ateneo Sant'Anselmo, 1992), pp. 267–74.
51 Augustine, Letter 164 2.3, trans. J. G. Cunningham, in *NPNFI*, vol. 1, p. 515.
52 J. N. D. Kelly, *Early Christian Creeds* (London: Longman, 1972), p. 289.
53 Augustine, Letter 164 3.6 [p. 516].
54 Ibid.
55 Ibid., 3.7 [p. 517].
56 Ibid., 3.8 [p. 517].
57 Augustine, Letter 187 6, in Augustine, *Selected Writings*, ed. and trans. Mary T. Clark (Mahwah, NJ: Paulist Press, 1984), p. 405.
58 Ibid.
59 Augustine, Letter 187 34 [p. 421].
60 Augustine, *De haeresibus* 79, in *PL*, vol. 42, col. 45.
61 Gregory the Great, Book 7, Epistle 15, trans. James Barmby, in *NPNFII*, vol. 12, p. 217.
62 *The Letters of Saint Boniface*, trans. Ephraim Emerton (New York, NY: Norton, 1976), p. 102.
63 Quoted in MacCulloch, *Harrowing of Hell*, p. 260, n. 2.
64 Quoted in Ralph V. Turner, 'Descendit ad inferos: medieval views on Christ's descent into hell and the salvation of the ancient just', *Journal of the History of Ideas* 27 (1966), p. 179. Since Erasmus, this work has been ascribed to 'Ambrosiaster'.
65 See *Abelard's Christian Theology*, ed. and trans. J. Ramsay McCallum (Oxford: Blackwell, 1948), p. 52.
66 Thomas Aquinas, *Compendium theologiae* 253, in Thomas Aquinas, *Compendium of Theology*, trans. Richard J. Regan (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009), p. 194.
67 Aquinas, *Summa theologica*, supplement 69.4.
68 Ibid., 69.5.
69 Thomas Aquinas, *Quaestiones disputatae de veritate* 14.11, in Thomas Aquinas, *The Disputed Question on Truth*, vol. 2, trans. James V. McGlynn (Chicago, IL: Henry Regnery, 1953). Available at http://dhspriory.org/thomas/QDdeVer.htm.
70 Ibid.
71 Dante, *Purgatorio*, 7.7–8.

3. Souls and Bodies

1 The authorship and date of this work have been much disputed. See David Rankin, *Athenagoras: Philosopher and Theologian* (Farnham: Ashgate, 2009). Rankin argues for the traditional ascription to Athenagoras.
2 Athenagoras, *On the Resurrection of the Dead* 15, trans. B. P. Pratten, in *ANF*, vol. 2, p. 157.
3 Ibid.
4 Plato, *The Phaedo* 106e, in *The Collected Dialogues of Plato, Including the Letters*, eds Edith Hamilton and Huntington Cairns (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1961), p. 88.
5 Ibid., 114c [p. 94].
6 Plato, *The Gorgias* 525c, in *The Collected Dialogues of Plato, Including the Letters*, eds Edith Hamilton and Huntington Cairns (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1961), p. 305.
7 Plato, *Republic* 614d, in *The Collected Dialogues of Plato, Including the Letters*, eds Edith Hamilton and Huntington Cairns (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1961), p. 839.
8 Ibid., 615e [p. 840].
9 Ibid., 621b [p. 844].
10 Caroline Walker Bynum, *The Resurrection of the Body in Western Christianity, 200–1336* (New York, NY: Columbia University Press, 1995), p. 10.
11 Augustine, Letter 166 2.3, trans. J. G. Cunningham, in *NPNFI*, vol. 1, p. 523.
12 For an excellent overview, see A. W. Argyle, 'The Christian doctrine of the origin of the soul', *Scottish Journal of Theology* 18 (1965), pp. 273–93.
13 See especially Peter Martens, 'Origen's doctrine of pre-existence and the opening chapters of Genesis', *Zeitschrift für Antikes Christentum* 16 (2013), pp. 516–49.
14 Origen, *On First Principles* 2.9.1, in Origen, *On First Principles*, trans. G. W. Butterworth (Gloucester, MA: Peter Smith, 1973), p. 129.
15 Ibid., 1.8.1 [p. 67].
16 Ibid., 3.6.3 [p. 248].
17 Ibid., 2.10.1 [p. 139].
18 See Lodi Nauta, 'The pre-existence of the soul in medieval Europe', *Recherches de théologie ancienne et medievale* 63 (1996), pp. 93–135; Philip C. Almond, *Heaven and Hell in Enlightenment England* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008).
19 See Philip C. Almond, *The British Discovery of Buddhism* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988); Raymond Schwab, *The Oriental Renaissance: Europe's Rediscovery of India and the East* (New York, NY: Columbia University Press, 1984).
20 We can distinguish a 'material' and a 'spiritual' version of traducianism. In the former, represented by Tertullian, the soul is 'within' the seed. In the latter, represented by Gregory of Nyssa, the soul is transmitted 'along with' the seed. This latter version is sometimes called 'generationism' or 'spiritual traducianism'. Augustine's sympathies lay more with Gregory than with Tertullian. The one exception in all this was Jesus, whose soul, according to Augustine, was created afresh by God.
21 Jerome, Letter 126.1, in *NPNFII*, vol. 6, p. 252.
22 Tertullian, *A Treatise on the Soul* 27, trans. Peter Holmes, in *ANF*, vol. 3, p. 208.
23 Ibid.

24 Thomas Aquinas, *Quaestiones disputatae de potentia dei* 3.9.29, in Thomas Aquinas, *On the Power of God*, trans. English Dominican Fathers (Westminster, MD: Newman Press, 1952). Available at http://dhspriory.org/thomas/QDdePotentia.htm. Aquinas is quoting from a work long attributed to Augustine entitled *De ecclesiasticis dogmatibus* (Of Church doctrine). The author was in fact the fifth-century priest Gennadius of Massilia. That an immortal soul is present from the moment of conception is of course the theological grounds for Catholic opposition to abortion.
25 See Don Cameron Allen, *Doubt's Boundless Sea* (Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Press, 1964), p. 160.
26 Ibid., pp. 184–5.
27 See Thomas Aquinas, *Summa theologica* 1.10.1, in Thomas Aquinas, *Summa theologica*, trans. Fathers of the English Dominican Province (New York, NY: Benziger Brothers, 1947). Available at http://www.ccel.org/ccel/aquinas/summa.html.
28 See ibid., 1.10.3.
29 See ibid., 1.10.5.
30 Ibid., 1.10.3.
31 See D. P. Walker, 'Eternity and the afterlife', *Journal of the Warburg and Courtauld Institutes* 27 (1964), pp. 241–50. I am indebted to Walker for this discussion.
32 Mark 12.18–27, Matt. 22.23–33, Luke 20.27–40.
33 See Peter Carnley, *The Structure of Resurrection Belief* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1987).
34 For a recent analysis of modern exegetical complexities around 1 Cor. 15, see Wolfgang Kraus and Martin Kraus, 'On eschatology in Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians', in Jan G. van der Watt, *Eschatology of the New Testament and Some Related Documents* (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2011), pp. 197–224.
35 'Medieval sourcebook: twelfth ecumenical council: Lateran IV 1215', in H. J. Schroeder (ed.), *Disciplinary Decrees of the General Councils: Text, Translation and Commentary* (St Louis, MO: B. Herder, 1937). pp. 236–96 (my italics). Available at http://www.fordham.edu/halsall/basis/lateran4.asp.
36 See for example John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, ed. John T. McNeill (Louisville, KY, and London: Westminster John Knox Press, 2006), 3.25.8.
37 Athenagoras, *On the Resurrection of the Dead* 15 [p. 157].
38 Ibid., 17 [p. 158].
39 Ibid., 3 [p. 150].
40 Ibid., 20–1 [pp. 160–1].
41 Ibid., 25 [p. 162].
42 Tertullian, *On the Resurrection of the Flesh* 1, trans. Peter Holmes, in *ANF*, vol. 3, p. 545.
43 Ibid., 15 [p. 555].
44 Ibid., 17 [p. 557].
45 Ibid.
46 Ibid., 52 [p. 585].
47 Augustine, *On Faith and the Creed* 10.24, trans. S. D. F. Salmond, in *NPNFI*, vol. 3, p. 333.
48 Augustine, *The City of God* 13.19, trans. Marcus Dods, in *NPNFI*, vol. 2, p. 255 (my italics).
49 Ibid., 13.20 [p. 256].

50 Ibid., 22.17 [p. 496].
51 Ibid., 13.22 [p. 257].
52 Augustine, Letter 92, trans. J. G. Cunningham, in *NPNFI*, vol. 1, p. 381. See also Letter 148.
53 Augustine, *City of God* 22.29 [p. 508].
54 On the incorporeality of the soul and its location in the body, the whole and each part of which it completely fills (as does a liquid its container), see Augustine, Letter 166, trans. J. G. Cunningham, in *NPNFI*, vol. 1, p. 524. See also R. J. Teske, 'Saint Augustine on the incorporeality of the soul', *Modern Schoolman* 60 (1983), pp. 220–35.
55 See Andrew Louth, *The Origins of the Christian Mystical Tradition: From Plato to Denys* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2007).
56 See Vladimir Lossky, *The Mystical Theology of the Eastern Church* (Crestwood, NY: St Vladimir's Seminary Press, 1976).
57 Quoted in Bynum, *Resurrection of the Body*, p. 267.
58 Although this distinction is often attributed to Abelard, I can find no reference to these terms used contrastingly before Thomas Aquinas.
59 Thomas Aquinas, *Compendium theologiae* 179, in Thomas Aquinas, *Compendium of Theology*, trans. Cyril Vollert (St Louis, MO, and London: Herder, 1947), p. 195.
60 Ibid., 180 [pp. 195–6].
61 Athenagoras, *The Resurrection of the Dead* 4, trans. B. P. Pratten, in *ANF*, vol. 2, p. 151.
62 Tertullian, *On the Resurrection of the Flesh* 61, trans. Peter Holmes, in *ANF*, vol. 3, p. 593.
63 Augustine, *City of God* 22.12–20 [p. 493ff.].
64 Quoted in Bynum, *Resurrection of the Body*, p. 123. See also Caroline Walker Bynum, *Fragmentation and Redemption: Essays on Gender and the Human Body in Medieval Religion* (New York, NY: Zone, 1992), ch. 7.
65 Thomas Aquinas, *Summa contra Gentiles* 4.81.13, trans. Charles J. O'Neil, in Thomas Aquinas, *Summa contra Gentiles*, ed. Joseph Kenny (New York, NY: Hanover House, 1955–7). Available at http://dhspriory.org/thomas/ContraGentiles4.htm.
66 Ibid.
67 Thomas Aquinas, *Compendium theologiae* 153 [p. 162].
68 Ibid., 157 [p. 169] (my italics).
69 Ibid., 168 [p. 179].
70 Ibid., 176 [p. 192].
71 Robert Boyle, *The Works of the Honourable Robert Boyle*, vol. 4, ed. Thomas Birch (2nd edn, London, 1772), p. 196. On Birch and resurrection, see Salvatore Ricciardo, 'Robert Boyle on God's "experiments": resurrection, immortality and mechanical philosophy', *Intellectual History Review* 24 (2014), pp. 1–17.
72 Humphrey Hody, *The Resurrection of the (Same) Body Asserted* (London, 1694), p. 187.
73 Ibid., p. 189.
74 Ibid., pp. 194–5.
75 Ibid., p. 205.
76 See Bernard McGinn, John J. Collins and Stephen J. Stein (eds), *The Encyclopedia of Apocalypticism* (New York, NY, and London: Continuum, 1998).
77 See Norman Cohn, *The Pursuit of the Millennium: Revolutionary Millenarians and Mystical Anarchists of the Middle Ages* (London: Pimlico, 1993).

4. Purgatory and Beyond

1 See Caroline Walker Bynum, *The Resurrection of the Body in Western Christianity, 200–1336* (New York, NY: Columbia University Press, 1995), pp. 283–91; and D. Douie, 'John XXII and the Beatific Vision', *Dominican Studies* 3 (1950), pp. 157–74. I am indebted to the latter for this discussion.
2 D. Douie, 'John XXII and the Beatific Vision', *Dominican Studies* 3 (1950), p. 168.
3 Benedict XII, *Benedictus Deus* (1336). Available at http://www.papalencyclicals.net/Ben12/B12bdeus.html.
4 Ibid.
5 Bynum, *Resurrection of the Body*, p. 283.
6 Thomas Aquinas, *Compendium theologiae* 181, in Thomas Aquinas, *Compendium of Theology*, trans. Cyril Vollert (St Louis, MO, and London: Herder, 1947), p. 197.
7 Ibid., 174 [p. 190].
8 The Second Epistle of Clement 16, ed. M. B. Riddle, in *ANF*, vol. 7, p. 552.
9 Ibid., 8 [p. 519] (my italics).
10 Cyprian, *An Address to Demetrianus* 25, trans. Robert Ernest Wallis, in *ANF*, vol. 5, p. 465 (my italics).
11 Chrysostom, *Homilies of St John Chrysostom, Archbishop of Constantinople, on the Gospel according to St Matthew* 36.3, trans. George Prevost, rev. M. B. Riddle, in *NPNFI*, vol. 10, p. 241.
12 Augustine, *On the Soul and Its Origin* 2.8, trans. Peter Holmes and Robert Ernest Wallis, in *NPNFI*, vol. 5, p. 334.
13 Quoted in Jeffrey A. Trumbower, *Rescue for the Dead: The Posthumous Salvation of Non-Christians in Early Christianity* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2001), p. 129.
14 Augustine, *Enchiridion* 110, trans. J. F. Shaw, in *NPNFI*, vol. 3, p. 272.
15 Ibid., 113 [p. 273].
16 Ibid., 68 [p. 260].
17 Ibid., 69 [p. 260].
18 Augustine, *The City of God* 21.13, trans. Marcus Dods, in *NPNFI*, vol. 2, p. 464.
19 Clement, *Stromata* 7.6, trans. William Wilson, in *ANF*, vol. 2, p. 491.
20 See Lawrence Hennessey, 'The place of saints and sinners after death', in Charles Kannengiesser and William L. Petersen (eds), *Origen of Alexandria: His World and his Legacy* (Notre Dame, IN: University of Notre Dame Press, 1988), pp. 295–312.
21 Jacques Le Goff, *The Birth of Purgatory* (Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press, 1981), pp. 59–60.
22 Ambrose, *Enarrationes in XII psalmos davidicos* 1.54, in *PL*, vol. 14, col. 993. See also Brian E. Daley, *The Hope of the Early Church* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Academic, 2010), pp. 98–9.
23 Caesarius of Arles, Sermon 179, in Caesarius of Arles, *Sermons*, vol. 2, trans. Mary Magdeleine Mueller, Fathers of the Church 47 (Washington DC: Catholic University of America Press, 1964), p. 453.
24 *The Dialogues of Saint Gregory, Surnamed the Great: Pope of Rome and the First of That Name*, ed. Edmund G. Gardner (London: Philip Lee Warner, 1911), 4.39. The phrase translated 'Purgatory fire' is better translated 'fire of purgation'. On Gregory, see R. R. Atwell, 'From Augustine to Gregory the Great: an evaluation of the emergence of the doctrine of Purgatory', *Journal of Ecclesiastical History* 38 (1987), pp. 173–86.

25 A list of which particular sins fell into which category was never formalised.
26 William of Auvergne, *De universo* 679aD-bA, quoted in Alan E. Bernstein, 'Esoteric theology: William of Auvergne on the fires of hell and Purgatory', *Speculum* 57 (1982), p. 511.
27 Le Goff, *Birth of Purgatory*, p. 228.
28 Quoted ibid.
29 Quoted in Patrick Toner, 'Prayers for the dead', *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, vol. 4 (New York, NY: Robert Appleton, 1908). Available at http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/04653a.htm.
30 Augustine, *Enchiridion* 110 [p. 272].
31 Ibid.
32 Quoted in Le Goff, *Birth of Purgatory*, pp. 102–3. See also *PL*, vol. 94, col. 30, and Megan McLaughlin, *Consorting with Saints: Prayers for the Dead in Early Medieval France* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1994).
33 See Le Goff, *Birth of Purgatory*, p. 341.
34 Dante, *Purgatorio*, ed. and trans. Robin Kirkpatrick (London: Penguin, 2007), 13.124–9.
35 Ibid., 13.50–1.
36 Ibid., 4.31–3.
37 Ibid., 13.69–72.
38 Ibid., 27.49–51.
39 Ibid., 4.88–93.
40 On the history of the connection between money and the afterlife in early Western Christianity, see Peter Brown, *The Ransom of the Soul: Afterlife and Wealth in Early Western Christianity* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2015).
41 Henry Bettenson and Chris Maunder (eds), *Documents of the Christian Church* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999), p. 203.
42 See Robert W. Shaffern, 'The medieval theology of indulgences', in Robert N. Swanson (ed.), *Promissory Notes on the Treasury of Merits in Late Medieval Europe* (Leiden: Brill, 2006), pp. 11–36. I am especially indebted to Shaffern for this discussion on Purgatory and indulgences.
43 See Robert W. Shaffern, 'Learned discussions of indulgences for the dead in the Middle Ages', *Church History* 61 (1992), p. 369.
44 Quoted in Shaffern, 'Medieval theology of indulgences', p. 35 (my italics).
45 Henry Charles Lea, *A History of Auricular Confession and Indulgences in the Latin Church*, vol. 3 (Philadelphia, PA: Lea Brothers, 1896), p. 346.
46 Le Goff, *Birth of Purgatory*, p. 12.
47 Carter Lindberg (ed.), *The European Reformations Sourcebook* (Oxford: Blackwell, 2000), p. 31.
48 *Works of Martin Luther with Introduction and Notes*, vol. 1, ed. and trans. Adolph Spaeth (Philadelphia, PA: A. J. Holman, 1915), pp. 25–6.
49 Ibid., p. 27.

5. *The Sleep of Death*

1 Quoted in George Hunston Williams, *The Radical Reformation* (Philadelphia, PA: Westminster Press, 1962), p. 23. On Christian mortalism more generally, see

Norman T. Burns, *Christian Mortalism from Tyndale to Milton* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1972) and Brian W. Ball, *The Soul Sleepers: Christian Mortalism from Wycliffe to Priestley* (Cambridge: James Clarke, 2008). I am especially indebted to these two groundbreaking works.

2 Pietro Pomponazzi, 'On the immortality of the soul', trans. William Henry Hay, in Ernst Cassirer, P. O. Kristeller and J. H. Randall (eds), *The Renaissance Philosophy of Man* (Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press, 1948), p. 313. See also Don Cameron Allen, *Doubt's Boundless Sea* (Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Press, 1964), ch. 2.

3 Pomponazzi, 'On the immortality of the soul', p. 364.

4 Ibid.

5 See ibid., p. 362.

6 *Luther's Works*, vol. 4: *Lectures on Genesis Chapters 21–25*, eds Jaroslav Pelikan and Walter A. Hansen (St Louis, MO: Concordia Publishing House, 1964), p. 312.

7 [Martin Luther], *An Exposition of Salomons Booke, Called Ecclesiastes or the Preacher* (London, 1573), p. 151v.

8 Martin Luther, 'Gospel sermon, twenty-fourth Sunday after Trinity', in *A Compend of Luther's Theology*, ed. Hugh T. Kerr (Philadelphia, PA: Westminster Press, 1943), p. 242.

9 Williams, *Radical Reformation*, p. xxv. Williams (p. xxiv) divides them into 'Anabaptists', 'Spiritualists' and 'Evangelical Rationalists'.

10 Burns, *Christian Mortalism*, p. 18.

11 More, *The Dialogue Concerning Tyndale* 4.9 and 4.10, quoted in Burns, *Christian Mortalism*, p. 99. For an excellent overview of More on heresy (of which Lutheranism was the exemplar), see Richard Rex, 'Thomas More and the heretics: statesman or fanatic?', in George M. Logan (ed.), *The Cambridge Companion to Thomas More* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2011), pp. 93–115.

12 William Tyndale, *An Answer to Sir Thomas More's Dialogue*, ed. Henry Walter (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1850), pp. 180–1.

13 Ibid., p. 189.

14 Ibid., p. 180.

15 Willyam Tindale [*sic*], *The New Testament Diligently Corrected and Compared with the Greek* (Antwerp, 1534), sig. xxv.v.

16 Joseph Ketley (ed.), *The Two Liturgies, AD 1549, and AD 1552* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1844), p. 147.

17 Ibid., p. 537.

18 John Calvin, *Psychopannychia*, in John Calvin, *Tracts Relating to the Reformation*, vol. 3, trans. Henry Beveridge (Edinburgh: Calvin Translation Society, 1851), p. 415.

19 Ibid.

20 John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, ed. John T. McNeill (Louisville, KY, and London: Westminster John Knox Press, 2006), 3.25.6.

21 Heinrich Bullinger, *An Holsome Antidotus or Counter-poysen, agaynst the Pestylent Heresye and Secte of the Anabaptistes* (London, 1548), p. 215ff.

22 Philip Schaff (ed.), *The Creeds of Christendom*, vol. 3: *The Creeds of the Evangelical Protestant Churches* (New York, NY: Harper, 1919), p. 842.

23 Quoted in Norman Cohn, *The Pursuit of the Millennium: Revolutionary Millenarians and Mystical Anarchists of the Middle Ages* (London: Pimlico, 1993), p. 290.

24 Quoted in Burns, *Christian Mortalism*, pp. 73–4. See also Ann Hughes, *Gangraena and the Struggle for the English Revolution* (New York, NY: Oxford University Press, 2004).
25 Quoted in Burns, *Christian Mortalism*, pp. 74–5.
26 Lodowick Muggleton, *The Acts of the Witnesses of the Spirit* (London, 1699), pp. 12–13.
27 John Reeve and Lodowick Muggleton, *Joyful News from Heaven* (London, 1658), p. 11v.
28 Richard Coppin, *Divine Teachings* (London, 1653), p. 8.
29 Joseph Salmon, *Heights in Depths* (London, 1651), pp. 37–8.
30 Quoted in Christopher Hill, *The World Turned Upside Down* (Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1975), p. 228.
31 Quoted in Nigel Smith (ed.), *A Collection of Ranter Writings from the Seventeenth Century* (London: Junction, 1993), pp. 236, 239.
32 Quoted ibid., p. 172.
33 Quoted ibid., p. 182.
34 Thomas Hobbes, *Leviathan* (London: Dent, 1973), p. 211.
35 Ibid., p. 338.
36 J. G. A. Pocock, 'Time, history and eschatology in the thought of Thomas Hobbes', in J. H. Elliott and H. G. Koenigsberger (eds), *The Diversity of History* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1949), p. 186.
37 Hobbes, *Leviathan*, p. 342.
38 Ibid., p. 247.
39 Ibid.
40 Ibid., p. 342.
41 R[ichard] O[verton], *Man Wholly Mortal […]* (London, 1655), pp. 32–3.
42 Ibid., pp. 38–9.
43 Alexander Ross, *The Philosophicall Touch-stone […]* (London, 1645), pp. 122–3.
44 *The Works of John Milton*, vol. 15, ed. Frank A. Patterson (New York, NY: Columbia University Press, 1931–8), pp. 40–1.
45 Daniel Defoe, *An Enquiry into the Case of Mr. Asgil's General Translation* (London, 1704), p. 8.
46 [John Asgill], *An argument proving that according to the covenant of eternal life revealed in the Scriptures, man may be translated from hence into that eternal life without passing through death, although the humane nature of Christ himself could not be thus translated till he had passed through death* (London, 1700), p. 61.
47 Ibid., p. 95.
48 Ibid., p. 82.
49 Ibid., p. 93.
50 Ibid., p. 106.
51 John Turner, *Justice Done to Human Souls […]* (London 1706), pp. 7–8.
52 Henry Dodwell, *A Preliminary Defence of the Epistolary Discourse, Concerning the Distinction between Soul and Spirit* (London, 1707), pt 1, p. 97.
53 Henry Dodwell, *An Epistolary Discourse Proving […] That the Soul is a Principle Naturally Mortal* (London, 1706), p. xliii.
54 Dodwell, *Preliminary Defence*, pt 2, p. 32.
55 Ibid., p. xxvi.
56 Quoted in Ball, *Soul Sleepers*, p. 133.

57 Ibid., p. 135.
58 Subtitle to William Coward, *Second Thoughts Concerning Human Soul […]* (London, 1702).
59 Ibid., sig. A7v.
60 John Locke, *An Essay Concerning Humane Understanding* (London, 1690), p. 188.
61 John Locke, *Writings on Religion*, ed. Victor Nuovo (Oxford: Clarendon, 2002), p. 29.
62 Ibid.
63 Ibid., p. 92.
64 Ibid., p. 95.
65 Ibid., p. 236.
66 Ibid.
67 Ibid.
68 Joseph Priestley, *An History of the Corruptions of Christianity*, vol. 1 (Birmingham: J. Johnson, 1882), p. 401. On mortalist readings of apparently immortalist biblical texts, see Ball, *Soul Sleepers*, pp. 201–7.
69 Although controversial, see Oscar Cullman, *Immortality of the Soul or Resurrection of the Dead?* (New York, NY: Macmillan, 1958).
70 See Le Roy Edwin Froom, *The Conditionalist Faith of Our Fathers* (Washington DC: Review & Herald, 1965–6).
71 Karl Barth, *Dogmatics in Outline* (New York, NY: Philosophical Library, 1949), p. 154.

6. The Saved and the Damned

1 [Joachim Stegmann], *Brevis disquisitio: Or, a Brief Enquiry Touching a Better Way […] to Refute Papists, and Reduce Protestants to Certainty and Unity in Religion* (London, 1653), p. 27. Stegmann was a follower of the radical reformer Faustus Socinus (1539–1604). As well as being mortalists, Socinians tended to deny the existence of Christ before his incarnation. The Unitarian tradition in its denial of the doctrine of the Trinity has its intellectual roots in Socinianism.
2 Henry More, *A Modest Inquiry into the Mystery of Iniquity […]* (London, 1664), p. 86.
3 *The Confession of Faith […] First Agreed upon by the Assembly of Divines at Westminster* (Glasgow, 1669), p. 66.
4 E[dward] W[arren], *No Praeexistence: Or a Brief Dissertation against the Hypothesis of Humane Souls, Living in a State Antecedaneous to This* (London, 1667), p. 44.
5 William Lupton, *The Eternity of Future Punishment Proved and Vindicated* (Oxford, 1708), p. 6.
6 John Calvin, *Psychopannychia*, in John Calvin, *Tracts Relating to the Reformation*, vol. 3, trans. Henry Beveridge (Edinburgh: Calvin Translation Society, 1851), p. 434.
7 Ibid., p. 472.
8 John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, ed. John T. McNeill (Louisville, KY, and London: Westminster John Knox Press, 2006), 2.16.17.
9 'Magisterial Protestant Reformation' refers here generally to the Reformation of the Lutheran and Reformed Churches, and excludes the Radical Reformation (typified by the Anabaptist traditions). More specifically, it refers to those Protestant Churches

(like the Lutheran and Reformed Churches) who saw themselves as subject to the secular agencies of government.

10 Augustine, *On Grace and Free Will* 8.20, trans. Peter Holmes and Robert Ernest Wallis, in *NPNFI*, vol. 5, p. 452.

11 Quoted in Alister E. McGrath, *Luther's Theology of the Cross* (Chichester: Wiley-Blackwell, 2011), p. 129.

12 Ibid., p. 130.

13 Alister E. McGrath, *Reformation Thought: An Introduction* (Oxford: Blackwell, 1993), p. 100.

14 Quoted ibid., p. 107. I am indebted to McGrath for this discussion of Luther.

15 Calvin, *Institutes*, 3.21.7.

16 Ibid., 3.23.2.

17 Ibid.

18 Ibid., 3.23.3.

19 Robert Burton, *The Anatomy of Melancholy*, vol. 1, ed. Thomas C. Faulkner, Nicholas K. Kiessling, Rhonda L. Blair (Oxford: Clarendon, 1989), p. 110. See Angus Gowland, 'The problem of early modern melancholy', *Past and Present* 191 (2006), pp. 77–120.

20 John Yates, *Gods Arraignment of Hypocrites* (London, 1615), pp. 357–8.

21 Ibid., p. 356.

22 Ibid., p. 357.

23 Ibid.

24 Ibid., p. 358. See also Leif Dixon, *Practical Predestinarians in England, c.1590–1640* (Farnham: Ashgate, 2014).

25 Stephen Denison, *A Compendious Catechisme […]* (London, 1621), pp. 2–3. On Denison, see Peter Lake, *The Boxmaker's Revenge: 'Orthodoxy', 'Heterodoxy' and the Politics of the Parish in Early Stuart London* (Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 2001).

26 Stephen Denison, *The Doctrine of Both the Sacraments: To Witte, Baptisme, and the Supper of the Lord […]* (London, 1621), pp. 145–6.

27 Max Weber, *The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism*, trans. Talcott Parsons (New York, NY, and London: Charles Scribner's Sons and George Allen & Unwin, 1950), p. 115.

28 Augustine, Letter 190, quoted in Alan D. Fitzgerald (ed.), *Augustine through the Ages: An Encyclopedia* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1999), p. 44.

29 Hieremy Drexelius, *A Pleasant and Profitable Treatise of Hell* (n.p., 1668), p. 148.

30 Tobias Swinden, *An Enquiry into the Nature and Place of Hell* (London, 1727), p. 92.

31 Ibid.

32 Ibid., p. 87.

33 Christopher Love, *Hells Terror: Or, A Treatise of the Torments of the Damned, as a Preservative against Security* (London, 1653), p. 66. By the time this was published, he had already met his destiny, having been executed for treason in 1651.

34 G. W. Leibniz, *Theodicy: Essays on the Goodness of God, the Freedom of Man and the Origin of Evil*, trans. E. M. Huggard (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1951), p. 126.

35 Matthew Horbery, *An Enquiry into the Scripture-doctrine Concerning the Duration of Future Punishments […]* (London, 1744), p. 207.

36 [Henry Hallywell], *A Private Letter of Satisfaction to a Friend* (n.p., 1667), p. 35.
37 Ibid., p. 36.
38 Ibid., pp. 38–9.
39 Archibald Campbell, *The Doctrines of a Middle State between Death and the Resurrection […]* (London, 1721), p. 112.
40 Immanuel Kant, *Critique of Practical Reason*, trans. Lewis White Beck (Indianapolis, IN: Bobbs–Merrill Co., 1956), p. 128.
41 Immanuel Kant, *On History*, trans. Lewis White Beck (Indianapolis, IN: Bobbs–Merrill Co., 1957), p. 70. In reading the later Kant, it is difficult to determine the extent to which Kant accepts that there is 'literally' any life after death, rather than heaven and hell being *only* 'ideas of reason' that we should use to govern our ethical life in the here and now. What is true is that Kant separates our lives as truly ethical from any thoughts of reward for doing one's moral duty. I am indebted to my colleague Emeritus Professor Ian Hunter for conversations on Kant.
42 John Shower, *Heaven and Hell: Or the Unchangeable State of Happiness or Misery for All Mankind in Another World* (London, 1700), pp. 17–18.
43 Richard Baxter, *The Saints' Everlasting Rest: Or, a Treatise of the Blessed State of the Saints in Their Enjoyment of God in Glory […]* (London, 1650), p. 323.
44 Love, *Hells Terror*, p. 41.
45 Ibid., p. 43.
46 [Richard Stafford], *A Discourse of the Misery of Hell, and Happiness of Heaven* (London, 1697), p. 2.
47 John Bunyan, *A Few Sighs from Hell: Or the Groans of a Damned Soul* (London, 1658), in *The Miscellaneous Works of John Bunyan*, vol. 1, ed. T. L. Underwood and Roger Sharrock (Oxford: Clarendon, 1976), p. 300.
48 Ibid., pp. 274–5.
49 Henry More, *The Immortality of the Soul, so Farre Forth as It Is Demonstrable from the Knowledge of Nature and the Light of Reason* (London, 1659), p. 442.
50 Ibid., p. 434.
51 Thomas Goodwin, *A Discourse of the Punishment of Sin in Hell; Demonstrating the Wrath of God to Be the Immediate Cause Thereof* (London, 1680), p. 98.
52 See Philip C. Almond, *The Devil: A New Biography* (London and Ithaca, NY: I.B.Tauris and Cornell University Press, 2015), ch. 9.
53 John Brandon, Τὸ πῦρ τὸ αἰώνιον: *Or, Everlasting Fire No Fancy […]* (London, 1678), p. 33.
54 Thomas Vincent, *Fire and Brimstone from Heaven, from Earth, from Hell […]* (London, 1670), p. 85.
55 William Beveridge, *A Sermon Preach'd before the Queen at White-hall, October 12, 1690* (London, 1698)., p. 4.
56 See John M. Steadman, 'Milton and patristic tradition: the quality of hell-fire', *Anglia* 76 (1958), pp. 116–28. The words quoted here are *Paradise Lost* 1.61–4, in *The Works of John Milton*, vol. 2, ed. Frank A. Patterson et al. (New York, NY: Columbia University Press, 1931), p. 10.
57 Vincent, *Fire and Brimstone*, p. 103.
58 See Emma Disley, 'Degrees of glory: Protestant doctrine and the concept of rewards hereafter', *Journal of Theological Studies* 42 (1991), pp. 77–105.
59 *The Works of John Milton*, vol. 16, ed. Frank A. Patterson et al. (New York, NY: Columbia University Press, 1934), p. 71.

60 See Augustine, *The City of God* 21.9, trans. Marcus Dods, in *NPNFI*, vol. 2, pp. 460–1.
61 William Strong, *The Worm That Dyeth Not, or, Hell Torments, in the Certainty and Eternity of Them* (London, 1672), pp. 10–11.
62 Bunyan, *Few Sighs from Hell*, p. 274.
63 F. W. Farrar, *Eternal Hope* (New York, NY: E. P. Dutton, 1878), p. 66.
64 Thomas Aquinas, *Summa theologica* supplement 94.1, in Thomas Aquinas, *Summa theologica*, trans. Fathers of the English Dominican Province (New York, NY: Benziger Brothers, 1947). Available at http://www.ccel.org/ccel/aquinas/summa.html.
65 Jonathan Edwards, 'Sermon XI: the eternity of hell torments', in *The Works of Jonathan Edwards*, vol. 2, ed. Edward Hickman (Edinburgh: Banner of Truth, 1974), p. 235. Available at http://www.ccel.org/ccel/edwards/works2.
66 Pieter Spierenburg, *The Spectacle of Suffering: Executions and the Evolution of Repression* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984), p. 185.
67 Friedrich Schleiermacher, *The Christian Faith* (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1928), p. 722 (para. 163).
68 Michael Wheeler, *Death and the Future Life in Victorian Literature and Theology* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1990), p. 188.
69 Horbery, *Enquiry*, p. 305.
70 Ibid., pp. 33–4.
71 Thomas Burnet, *A Treatise Concerning the State of Departed Souls before, and at, and after the Resurection* [*sic*] (London, 1733), p. 357.
72 Goodwin, *Discourse*, p. 79.
73 Jonathan Edwards, 'Sermon II: sinners in the hands of an angry God', in *The Works of Jonathan Edwards*, vol. 2, ed. Edward Hickman (Edinburgh: Banner of Truth, 1974), p. 27. Available at http://www.ccel.org/ccel/edwards/works2.
74 Ibid., p. 18.
75 Matthew Tindal, *Christianity as Old as the Creation* (London, 1731), p. 68.
76 Francis Blyth, *Eternal Misery the Necessary Consequence of infinite Mercy Abused: A Sermon […]* (London, 1740), p. 26.
77 D. P. Walker, *The Decline of Hell: Seventeenth-century Discussions of Eternal Torment* (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1964), p. 63.
78 William Whiston, *The Eternity of Hell Torments Considered […]* (London, 1740), pp. 18–19.
79 William Whiston, *Sermons and Essays […]* (London, 1709), p. 220.
80 William Whiston, *Astronomical Principles of Religion Natural and Reveal'd in Nine Parts […]* (London, 1717), p. 156.
81 Hence the alternative name for annihilationism, namely, conditionalism.
82 Henry Constable, *The Duration and Nature of Future Punishment* (London: Kellaway, 1876), p. 211. This work ran to six editions between 1868 and 1886. For Victorian views on annihilationism, see Geoffrey Rowell, *Hell and the Victorians* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1974). I am indebted to Rowell for his discussion of the Victorian period.
83 See Walker, *Decline of Hell*, p. 59ff.; Philip C. Almond, *Heaven and Hell in Enlightenment England* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008); and especially Richard Bauckham, 'Universalism: a historical survey', *Themelios* 4 (1978), pp. 47–54. For a list of seventeenth- and eighteenth-century universalists, see Ezra Abbott's bibliography appended to W. R. Alger, *A Critical History of the Doctrine of a Future Life* (New York, NY: W. J. Widdleton, 1878).
84 Schleiermacher, *Christian Faith*, p. 722.

85 Broad Church Anglicans attempted to steer a middle path between the extremes of Anglo-Catholic (High Church) Anglicans and evangelical (Low Church) Anglicans.
86 Farrar, *Eternal Hope*, pp. 64–5.
87 Ibid., pp. 70, 72.
88 Ibid., p. 75.
89 Ibid., p. 86 (my italics).
90 Ibid.
91 Ibid., p. 88.
92 Rowell, *Hell and the Victorians*, p. 146.
93 Ibid., p. 148.
94 Samuel Taylor Coleridge, *Aids to Reflection and the Confessions of an Inquiring Spirit* (London: George Bell, 1884), p. 102.
95 Don Cupitt, *Crisis of Moral Authority* (London: SCM Press, 1985), p. 22. On atheism, see Gavin Hyman, *A Short History of Atheism* (London: I.B.Tauris, 2010).
96 Quoted in Rowell, *Hell and the Victorians*, p. 212.
97 Thomas Hardy, *Tess of the d'Urbervilles* (London: Macmillan, 1928), ch. 14.
98 James Joyce, *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man* (New York, NY: B. W. Huebsch, 1916), ch. 3. Available at http://www.gutenberg.org/files/4217/4217-h/4217-h.htm#chap03.
99 Ludwig Feuerbach, *The Essence of Christianity*, trans. George Eliot [Marian Evans] (London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trübner, 1890), p. 182.
100 Karl Marx, 'Theses on Feuerbach', in Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels, *The Marx–Engels Reader*, ed. Robert C. Tucker (New York, NY: Norton, 1978), p. 144.
101 Sigmund Freud, 'Lecture XXXV: a philosophy of life', in Sigmund Freud, *New Introductory Lectures on Psycho-analysis* (London: Hogarth Press, 1933), p. 206.
102 Ibid., p. 215.
103 Quoted in Wheeler, *Death and the Future Life*, p. 198.

7. Heavens, Sacred and Secular

1 Quoted in D. J. Enright, *The Oxford Book of Death* (Oxford: Oxford University Press,1983), p. 179.
2 Thomas Browne, *The Works of Sir Thomas Browne*, vol. 1, ed. Geoffrey Keynes (London: Faber, 1964), p. 60.
3 Richard Baxter, *The Saints' Everlasting Rest: Or, a Treatise of the Blessed State of the Saints in Their Enjoyment of God in Glory [...]* (London, 1650), p. 24.
4 Ibid., p. 86.
5 Ibid.
6 See Colleen McDannell and Bernhard Lang, *Heaven: A History* (New York, NY: Vintage, 1990), p. 173.
7 William Gearing, *A Prospect of Heaven: Or, A Treatise of the Happiness of the Saints in Glory* (London, 1673), p. 292.
8 [John Dunton], *An Essay Proving We Shall Know Our Friends in Heaven* (London, 1698), p. 29.
9 Ibid., p. 64.
10 [John Dunton (ed.)], *Athenian Gazette* (1691), vol. 3, no. 13.
11 [Dunton], *Essay*, p. 2.

12 See Peter Walmsley, 'Whigs in heaven: Elizabeth Rowe's *Friendship in Death*', *Eighteenth-century Studies* 44 (2011), pp. 315–30.
13 Ibid., p. 326.
14 Elizabeth Singer Rowe, *Friendship in Death: In Twenty Letters from the Dead to the Living [...]* (London, 1728), pp. 11–12. It is a vision of heaven which, as we will see, reappears in the mid-nineteenth century in Elizabeth Stuart Phelps's novel *The Gates Ajar*.
15 Isaac Watts, *Death and Heaven: Or the last Enemy Conquer'd, and Separate Spirits Made Perfect* (London, 1722), pp. 79–80.
16 Isaac Watts, *The World to Come: Or, Discourses on the Joys or Sorrows of Departed Souls at Death [...]* (London, 1739), p. 245.
17 Ibid., p. 322.
18 Ibid., pp. 324–5.
19 Watts, *Death and Heaven*, p. 135.
20 Watts, *World to Come*, p. 327.
21 Watts, *Death and Heaven*, p. 109.
22 Ibid., p. 143.
23 Ibid., p. 146.
24 Ibid., p. 126.
25 Ibid., p. 216.
26 Ibid., pp. 217–8.
27 Ibid., p. 145.
28 John Shower, *Death a Deliverance: Or, a Funeral Discourse, Preach'd (in Part) on the Decease of Mrs Mary Doolittle [...]* (London, 1693), p. 77.
29 Augustine, *On the Predestination of the Saints* 28, trans. Peter Holmes and Robert Ernest Wallis, in *NPNFI*, vol. 5, p. 511.
30 *Boswell's Life of Johnson*, vol. 2, ed. George Birkbeck Hill (Oxford: Clarendon, 1934–50), p. 162.
31 *The Gentleman's Magazine* 9 (1739), p. 5b. See Bernhard Lang, *Meeting in Heaven: Modernising the Christian Afterlife, 1600–2000* (Frankfurt: Peter Lang, 2011), pp. 40–1.
32 Henry More, *The Immortality of the Soul, so Farre Forth as It Is Demonstrable from the Knowledge of Nature and the Light of Reason* (London, 1659), pp. 412–13.
33 [John Dunton (ed.)], *Athenian Gazette* (1691), vol. 3, no. 23.
34 Ibid., vol. 3, no. 29.
35 More, *Immortality of the Soul*, p. 343.
36 Thomas Burnet, *A Treatise Concerning the State of Departed Souls before, and at, and after the Resurection* [*sic*] (London, 1733), p. 209.
37 Rowe, *Friendship in Death*, p. 9.
38 Gearing, *Prospect of Heaven*, p. 204.
39 McDannell and Lang, *Heaven*, p. 183.
40 Quoted in John Casey, *After Lives: A Guide to Heaven, Hell, and Purgatory* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009), p. 337.
41 Immanuel Kant, *Dreams of a Spirit Seer, Illustrated by Dreams of Metaphysics* (London: S. Sonnenschein, 1900), p. 101.
42 Emanuel Swedenborg, *Heaven and Hell: The Portable New Century Edition*, trans. George F. Dole (West Chester, PA: Swedenborg Foundation, 2002), § 417. This is a translation of Swedenborg's 1758 *De coelo et eius mirabilibus, et de inferno, ex*

auditis et visis (On heaven and its wonders, and on hell, from things heard and seen). It was first translated into English in 1778. It is the most accessible source of Swedenborg's views on the afterlife. For an excellent overview see Lang, *Meeting in Heaven*, pp. 79–120.

43 Swedenborg, *Heaven and Hell*, § 535.
44 Ibid.
45 Ibid., § 427.
46 Ibid., § 457.
47 Ibid.
48 Ibid., § 75.
49 Ibid., § 236.
50 See Philip C. Almond, *Adam and Eve in Seventeenth-century Thought* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008), pp. 26–42. Swedenborg may well have derived his apparent knowledge of the universal language from Christian Cabbala, and especially from Francis Mercurius van Helmont. See ibid., p. 130; Umberto Eco, *The Search for the Perfect Language* (Oxford: Blackwell, 1995), pp. 82–3.
51 John Engelbrecht, *The Divine Visions of John Engelbrecht […]*, trans. Francis Okeley (Northampton, 1780), p. 62. I am indebted to Dr Leigh Penman for this reference. Engelbrecht became known among Swedenborgians as 'the German Swedenborg'.
52 Swedenborg, *Heaven and Hell*, § 184.
53 Ibid.
54 Ibid., § 185.
55 See Mark 12.25: 'Jesus said to them […] "For when they rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given in marriage but are like angels in heaven."'
56 Swedenborg, *Heaven and Hell*, § 367.
57 Ibid., § 383.
58 Ibid., § 547.
59 Ibid., § 550.
60 Ibid., § 586.
61 Ibid., § 578.
62 Quoted in Wouter J. Hanegraaff, *New Age Religion and Western Culture* (New York, NY: State University of New York, 1998), pp. 424–5.
63 Swedenborg, *Heaven and Hell*, § 1.
64 See Hanegraaff, *New Age Religion*, p. 429, where Hanegraaff argues that Swedenborg marks the 'creation' in Western thought of 'occultism' as an adaptation of 'esotericism' to a disenchanted world.
65 The only people about whom Swedenborg is uncertain about their entering heaven are 'papists'. He is strongly anti-Catholic.
66 *The Examiner*, 7 August 1808, quoted in Robert Rix, *William Blake and the Cultures of Radical Christianity* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2007), p. 100. For Blake's reception of Swedenborg, see especially ch. 3.
67 Quoted in Michael Wheeler, *Death and the Future Life in Victorian Literature and Theology* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1990), p. 151.
68 Reginald Heber, 'Holy, holy, holy', in *The New English Hymnal* (Norwich: Canterbury Press, 1986).
69 Quoted in Wheeler, *Death and the Future Life*, p. 162.
70 Quoted in Rix, *William Blake*, p. 137.

71 See Robert W. Delp, 'Andrew Jackson Davis: prophet of American spiritualism', *Journal of American History* 54 (1967), pp. 43–56.
72 Selling 80,000 copies in the United States and over 100,000 in England in 55 editions, it was beaten only by Harriet Beecher Stowe's *Uncle Tom's Cabin*.
73 Elizabeth Stuart Phelps, *The Gates Ajar* (Boston, MA: Fields, Osgood, 1868), p. 170.
74 Ibid., p. 97.
75 Ibid., p. 116.
76 Ibid., p. 201.
77 Ibid., p. 171.
78 Ibid., pp. 172–3.
79 See ibid., pp. 169–70.
80 Ibid., p. 70. See also p. 155.
81 Quoted in Elizabeth Stuart Phelps, *The Gates Ajar*, ed. Helen Sootin Smith (Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1964), p. xxii.
82 Phelps, *Gates Ajar* [1869], p. 81.
83 Ibid., p. 140.
84 Ibid., p. 181.
85 François-René Blot, *In Heaven We Know Our Own: Or, Solace for the Suffering* (New York, NY: Benziger Brothers, n.d), p. 109. I have drawn upon the seventh edition published in the 1890s. The first English edition was in 1863.
86 Ibid., p. 146.
87 Phelps, *Gates Ajar* [1869], p. 188.
88 See Peter Harrison, 'Animal souls, metempsychosis, and theodicy', *Journal of the History of Philosophy* 31 (1993), pp. 519–44.
89 J. G. Wood, *Man and Beast: Here and Hereafter* (London: Gibbings, 1903), p. 484. See also the German Darwinist Ernst Haeckel's *The Riddle of the Universe* (London: Watts, 1929), p. 164. That animals will ultimately be 'saved' has been reinforced in 2015 in the papal encyclical *Laudato si'* (Praise be to you): 'At the end, we will find ourselves face to face with the infinite beauty of God (cf. 1 Cor. 13.12), and be able to read with admiration and happiness the mystery of the universe, which with us will share in unending plenitude. Even now we are journeying towards the sabbath of eternity, the new Jerusalem, towards our common home in heaven. Jesus says: "I make all things new" (Rev. 21:5). Eternal life will be a shared experience of awe, in which each creature, resplendently transfigured, will take its rightful place and have something to give those poor men and women who will have been liberated once and for all' (243). If Pope Francis does not go so far here as to endorse animals in heaven immediately after their deaths, he does nonetheless suggest that, at the end of history, there will be a restoration to life of all creatures: this is one aspect of the tradition of Eden restored, a place where the 'wolf and the lamb shall feed together, the lion shall eat straw like the ox' (Isa. 65.25). This is usually misquoted as 'The lion will lie down with the lamb', to which Woody Allen (not quite up on his 'end of history' eschatology) added: 'But the lamb won't get much sleep.'
90 Quoted in R. Laurence Moore, 'Spiritualism and science: reflections on the first decade of the spirit rappings', *American Quarterly* 24 (1972), p. 483. See also R. Laurence Moore, 'Spiritualism', in Edwin S. Gaustad (ed.), *The Rise of Adventism: Religion and Society in Mid-nineteenth-century America* (New York, NY: Harper & Row, 1974), pp. 79–103. I am particularly indebted to Moore.

91 See E. E. Lewis, *A Report of the Mysterious Noises, Heard in the House of Mr John D. Fox, in Hydesville, Arcadia, Wayne County [...]* (Canandaigua, NY: E. E. Lewis, 1848).
92 See Frank Podmore, *Modern Spiritualism: A History and a Criticism*, vol. 1 (London: Methuen, 1902), p. 183.
93 Quoted in Hanegraaff, *New Age Religion*, p. 437.
94 See Alex Owen, *The Darkened Room: Women, Power, and Spiritualism in Late Nineteenth Century England* (London: Virago, 1989).
95 Quoted in Moore, 'Spiritualism', p. 93.
96 Ibid., pp. 92–3.
97 Ibid., p. 85.
98 Quoted in Katherine H. Porter, *Through a Glass Darkly: Spiritualism in the Browning Circle* (Lawrence, KS: University of Kansas Press, 1958), p. 46.
99 Ibid., p. 49. Robert Browning's poem 'Mr Sludge the medium' was based on D. D. Home.
100 See Peter Harrison, *The Territories of Science and Religion* (Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press, 2015) and Richard Noakes, 'The sciences of spiritualism in Victorian Britain: possibilities and problems', in Tatiana Kontou and Sarah Willburn (eds), *The Ashgate Research Companion to Nineteenth-century Spiritualism and the Occult* (Farnham: Ashgate, 2012), pp. 25–54.
101 Anon., 'Mr Baden-Powell's new work', *British Spiritual Telegraph* 4 (1859), p. 138.
102 J. H. Powell, *Spiritualism; Its Facts and Phases* (London: F. Pitman, 1864), p. 55.
103 'Objects of the society', *Proceedings of the Society for Psychical Research* 1 (1882), p. 4.
104 *Life and Letters of Thomas Henry Huxley*, vol. 2, ed. Leonard Huxley (London: Macmillan, 1908), p. 144. An account of a seance that Huxley attended follows on pp. 144–8.
105 Ibid.
106 William Kalush and Larry Sloman, *The Secret Life of Harry Houdini: The Making of America's First Superhero* (New York, NY: Atria, 2006), p. 488.
107 Quoted in McDannell and Lang, *Heaven*, p. 325.
108 *The Autobiography of Charles Darwin 1809–1882*, ed. Nora Barlow (London: Collins, 1958), p. 91.
109 Haeckel, *Riddle of the Universe*, p. 172. Haeckel would himself distinguish his 'monism' from 'materialism'. This distinction, however, does not impact on his views on *personal* immortality. See also p. 166 for various 'proofs' of the immortality of the soul described as pure myth, baseless dogma, false anthropism [*sic*], pious wish, error and spiritualistic fantasy.
110 Ibid., p. 170.
111 Jürgen Moltmann, 'Resurrection as hope', *Harvard Theological Review* 61 (1968), p. 129. His theology of hope was intended to offer a modern rethink of personal and cosmic eschatology.
112 Rosemary Radford Ruether, *Sexism and God-talk: Toward a Feminist Theology* (Boston, MA: Beacon Press, 1983), p. 258.
113 Karl Rahner, *Theological Investigations*, vol. 4: *More Recent Writings* (London: Darton, Longman & Todd, 1974), p. 347.
114 Ibid., p. 348.
115 Ibid., pp. 353–4.

116 'The builder's creed', Hubert L. Eaton [website]. Available at http://huberteaton.com/the-builders-creed.html.
117 Casey, *After Lives*, p. 389.
118 Evelyn Waugh, *The Loved One: An Anglo-American Tragedy* (Boston, MA: Little, Brown, 1948), p. 39.
119 Aldous Huxley, *The Perennial Philosophy* (London: Chatto & Windus, 1947), p. 8.
120 Huxley saw his perennial philosophy as the same as that which the early modern philosopher Agostino Steuco (1497–1548) had identified as the *perenni philosophia* and which the philosopher Gottfried Leibniz (1646–1716) later adapted to his philosophy of harmony. See Charles B. Schmitt, 'Perrenial [*sic*] philosophy from Agostino Steuco to Leibniz', *Journal of the History of Ideas* 27 (1966), pp. 505–32. The synthesis of Western and Eastern ideas that makes up Huxley's perennial philosophy can only be traced back to the late nineteenth-century Theosophical Society of Helena Blavatsky (1831–91), where it was labelled the 'Ancient Wisdom'.
121 Huxley, *Perennial Philosophy*, pp. 231–2. Perennial philosophy generally assumes that mystical experience is everywhere the same. For a critique of this view, see Steven T. Katz, *Mysticism and Language* (New York, NY: Oxford University Press, 1992).
122 H. P. Blavatsky, *Isis Unveiled: A Master Key to the Mysteries of Ancient and Modern Science and Theology*, vol. 1: *Science* (Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1976), p. 9.
123 Anon., *The Wisdom of Ramala*, pp. 90–1, quoted in Hanegraaff, *New Age Religion*, p. 287. These teachings are given by a group of 'Masters on the Spiritual Planes' using the collective name of Ramala. Their teachings are 'channelled' by a husband-and-wife team, David and Ann Jevons.
124 Arthur Conan Doyle, *The Wanderings of a Spiritualist* (New York, NY: George H. Doran, 1921), p. 64.
125 Arthur Conan Doyle, *Memories and Adventures* (Boston, MA: Little, Brown, 1924), ch. 9. Available at http://gutenberg.net.au/ebooks14/1400681h.html#ch-09.
126 Doyle, *Wanderings*, p. 72.
127 Doyle, *Memories and Adventures*, ch. 32.
128 Quoted in Paul Smith, 'The Cottingley fairies: the end of a legend', in Peter Narváez (ed.), *The Good People: New Fairylore Essays* (Lexington, KY: University Press of Kentucky, 1997), p. 382.
129 Arthur Conan Doyle, 'Fairies photographed', *Strand Magazine* (December 1920), p. 468. See also Arthur Conan Doyle, *The Coming of the Fairies* (New York, NY: George H. Doran, 1922).
130 Max Weber, 'Science as a vocation' (1918) [published as 'Wissenschaft als Beruf', in Max Weber, *Gesammelte Aufsaetze zur Wissenschaftslehre* (Tübingen: J. C. B. Mohr, 1922), pp. 524–55]. Available at www.wisdom.weizmann.ac.il/~oded/X/WeberScienceVocation.pdf.
131 Michael Saler, 'Modernity and enchantment: a historical review', *American Historical Review* 111 (2006), p. 695. I am grateful to Saler for his persuasive discussion of this issue.
132 Ursula Le Guin, *The Earthsea Quartet* (London: Penguin, 1993), p. 457.
133 Ibid., p. 456.
134 Cormac McCarthy, *The Road* (London: Picador, 2007), p. 181. The Muslim confession of faith is: 'There is no God but God and Muhammad is his prophet.'
135 Ibid., pp. 306–7.

136 Ibid., p. 306.
137 Marilyn Ferguson, *The Aquarian Conspiracy: Personal and Social Transformation in the 1980s* (Los Angeles, CA: J. P. Tarcher, 1980), p. 70.
138 Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, *The Phenomenon of Man* (London: Harper & Row, 1965), p. 221.
139 Ibid., p. 130.
140 Ibid., pp. 261–2.
141 Hal Lindsey, *The Late Great Planet Earth* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1970), p. 177.
142 Paul Boyer, *When Time Shall Be No More: Prophecy Belief in Modern American Culture* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1992), pp. 317–18.
143 Quoted in Ian Hesketh, 'The story of big history', *History of the Present* 4 (2014), p. 171. I am indebted to my colleague Ian Hesketh for this discussion.
144 David Christian, *Maps of Time: An Introduction to Big History* (Berkeley, CA: University of California Press, 2011), p. 3.
145 Ibid., p. 2.
146 Ibid., p. 3.

Epilogue

1 *Bede's Ecclesiastical History of England: A Revised Translation with Introduction, Life, and Notes*, ed. and trans. A. M. Sellar (London: George Bell, 1907), 2.13.

Bibliography

Abelard, Peter, *Abelard's Christian Theology*, ed. and trans. J. Ramsay McCallum (Oxford: Blackwell, 1948).

—— *Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*, trans. Steven Cartwright (Washington DC: Catholic University of America Press, 2012).

Alger, W. R., *A Critical History of the Doctrine of a Future Life* (New York, NY: W. J. Widdleton, 1878).

Allen, Don Cameron, *Doubt's Boundless Sea* (Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Press, 1964).

Almond, Philip C., *The British Discovery of Buddhism* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988).

——*Adam and Eve in Seventeenth-century Thought* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008).

—— *Heaven and Hell in Enlightenment England* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008).

—— *The Devil: A New Biography* (London and Ithaca, NY: I.B.Tauris and Cornell University Press, 2015).

Anon., 'Mr Baden-Powell's new work', *British Spiritual Telegraph* 4 (1859), pp. 137–8.

Anselm, *The Virgin Conception and Original Sin*, in *Anselm of Canterbury*, vol. 3, ed. and trans. Jasper Hopkins and Herbert Richardson (Toronto and New York, NY: Edwin Mellen Press, 1976).

Aquinas, Thomas, *Compendium of Theology*, trans. Cyril Vollert (St Louis, MO, and London: Herder, 1947).

—— *Summa theologica*, trans. Fathers of the English Dominican Province (New York, NY: Benziger Brothers, 1947). Available at http://www.ccel.org/ccel/aquinas/summa.html.

—— *On the Power of God*, trans. English Dominican Fathers (Westminster, MD: Newman Press, 1952). Available at http://dhspriory.org/thomas/QDdePotentia.htm.

—— *The Disputed Question on Truth*, vol. 2, trans. James V. McGlynn (Chicago, IL: Henry Regnery, 1953). Available at http://dhspriory.org/thomas/QDdeVer.htm.

——*Summa contra Gentiles*, ed. Joseph Kenny (New York, NY: Hanover House, 1955–7). Available at http://dhspriory.org/thomas/ContraGentiles4.htm.

—— *On Evil*, trans. Richard Regan, ed. Brian Davies (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2003).

—— *Compendium of Theology*, trans. Richard J. Regan (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009).

Argyle, A. W., 'The Christian doctrine of the origin of the soul', *Scottish Journal of Theology* 18 (1965), pp. 273–93.

[Asgill, John], *An argument proving that according to the covenant of eternal life revealed in the Scriptures, man may be translated from hence into that eternal life without passing*

through death, although the humane nature of Christ himself could not be thus translated till he had passed through death (London, 1700).

Atwell, R. R., 'From Augustine to Gregory the Great: an evaluation of the emergence of the doctrine of Purgatory', *Journal of Ecclesiastical History* 38 (1987), pp. 173–86.

Augustine, *The Enchiridion*, trans. J. F. Shaw, in Philip Schaff (ed.), *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers: First Series*, vol. 3 (Buffalo, NY: Christian Literature, 1887). Available at http://www.newadvent.org/fathers/1302.htm.

—— *The Letters of St Augustine*, ed. W. J. Sparrow-Simpson (London and New York, NY: SPCK and Macmillan, 1919).

——*Selected Writings*, ed. and trans. Mary T. Clark (Mahwah, NJ: Paulist Press, 1984).

—— *On Free Choice of the Will*, trans. Thomas Williams (Indianapolis, IN: Hackett, 1993).

Ball, Brian W., *The Soul Sleepers: Christian Mortalism from Wycliffe to Priestley* (Cambridge: James Clarke, 2008).

Barth, Karl, *Dogmatics in Outline* (New York, NY: Philosophical Library, 1949).

Bartsch, Hans Werner (ed.), *Kerygma and Myth: A Theological Debate* (New York, NY, and Evanston, IL: Harper & Row, 1961).

Bauckham, Richard, 'Universalism: a historical survey', *Themelios* 4 (1978), pp. 47–54.

Baun, Jane, 'The fate of babies dying before baptism in Byzantium', in Diana Wood (ed.), *The Church and Childhood* (Oxford: Blackwell, 1994), pp. 115–25.

Baxter, Richard, *The Saints' Everlasting Rest: Or, a Treatise of the Blessed State of the Saints in Their Enjoyment of God in Glory […]* (London, 1650).

Beatrice, Pier Franco, *The Transmission of Sin: Augustine and the Pre-Augustinian Sources*, trans. Adam Kamesar (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2013).

Bede, *Bede's Ecclesiastical History of England: A Revised Translation with Introduction, Life, and Notes*, ed. and trans. A. M. Sellar (London: George Bell, 1907).

Benedict XII, *Benedictus Deus* (1336). Available at http://www.papalencyclicals.net/Ben12/B12bdeus.html.

Bernstein, Alan E., 'Esoteric theology: William of Auvergne on the fires of hell and Purgatory', *Speculum* 57 (1982), pp. 509–31.

—— *The Formation of Hell: Death and Retribution in the Ancient and Early Christian Worlds* (Ithaca, NY, and London: Cornell University Press, 1993).

Bettenson, Henry, and Chris Maunder (eds), *Documents of the Christian Church* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999).

Beveridge, William, *A Sermon Preach'd before the Queen at White-hall, October 12, 1690* (London, 1698).

Blavatsky, H. P., *Isis Unveiled: A Master Key to the Mysteries of Ancient and Modern Science and Theology*, vol. 1: *Science* (Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1976).

Blot, François-René, *In Heaven We Know Our Own: Or, Solace for the Suffering* (New York, NY: Benziger Brothers, n.d).

Blunt, Henry, *A Voyage into the Levant […]* (London, 1664).

Blyth, Francis, *Eternal Misery the Necessary Consequence of infinite Mercy Abused: A Sermon […]* (London, 1740).

Boniface, St, *The Letters of Saint Boniface*, trans. Ephraim Emerton (New York, NY: Norton, 1976).

Boswell, James, *Boswell's Life of Johnson*, ed. George Birkbeck Hill, 6 vols (Oxford: Clarendon, 1934–50).

Boyer, Paul, *When Time Shall Be No More: Prophecy Belief in Modern American Culture* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1992).

Boyle, Robert, *The Works of the Honourable Robert Boyle*, ed. Thomas Birch, 6 vols (2nd edn, London, 1772).

Brandon, John, *Τὸ πῦρ τὸ αἰώνιον: Or, Everlasting Fire No Fancy* […] (London, 1678).

Brown, Peter, *The Ransom of the Soul: Afterlife and Wealth in Early Western Christianity* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2015).

Browne, Thomas, *The Works of Sir Thomas Browne*, ed. Geoffrey Keynes, 4 vols (London: Faber, 1964).

'The builder's creed', Hubert L. Eaton [website]. Available at http://huberteaton.com/the-builders-creed.html.

Bullinger, Heinrich, *An Holsome Antidotus or Counter-poysen, agaynst the Pestylent Heresye and Secte of the Anabaptistes* (London, 1548).

Bultmann, Rudolf, *Jesus Christ and Mythology* (New York, NY: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1958).

Bunyan, John, *A Few Sighs from Hell: Or the Groans of a Damned Soul* (London, 1658), in *The Miscellaneous Works of John Bunyan*, vol. 1, ed. T. L. Underwood and Roger Sharrock (Oxford: Clarendon, 1976).

Burkert, Walter, *Greek Religion: Archaic and Classical*, trans. John Raffan (Oxford: Blackwell, 1985).

Burnet, Thomas, *A Treatise Concerning the State of Departed Souls before, and at, and after the Resurection* [*sic*] (London, 1733).

Burns, Norman T., *Christian Mortalism from Tyndale to Milton* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1972).

Burton, Robert, *The Anatomy of Melancholy*, ed. Thomas C. Faulkner, Nicholas K. Kiessling, Rhonda L. Blair, 6 vols (Oxford: Clarendon, 1989–2001).

Bynum, Caroline Walker, *Fragmentation and Redemption: Essays on Gender and the Human Body in Medieval Religion* (New York, NY: Zone, 1992).

—— *The Resurrection of the Body in Western Christianity, 200–1336* (New York, NY: Columbia University Press, 1995).

Calvin, John, *Tracts Relating to the Reformation*, trans. Henry Beveridge, 3 vols (Edinburgh: Calvin Translation Society, 1844–51).

——*Institutes of the Christian Religion*, ed. John T. McNeill (Louisville, KY, and London: Westminster John Knox Press, 2006).

Campbell, Archibald, *The Doctrines of a Middle State between Death and the Resurrection […]* (London, 1721).

Carnley, Peter, *The Structure of Resurrection Belief* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1987).

Casey, John, *After Lives: A Guide to Heaven, Hell, and Purgatory* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009).

Cassirer, Ernst, P. O. Kristeller and J. H. Randall (eds), *The Renaissance Philosophy of Man* (Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press, 1948).

Charlesworth, James H. (ed.), *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*, vol. 1: *Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments* (New York, NY: Doubleday, 1983).

Christian, David, *Maps of Time: An Introduction to Big History* (Berkeley, CA: University of California Press, 2011).

Cohn, Norman, *The Pursuit of the Millennium: Revolutionary Millenarians and Mystical Anarchists of the Middle Ages* (London: Pimlico, 1993).

Coleridge, Samuel Taylor, *Aids to Reflection and the Confessions of an Inquiring Spirit* (London: George Bell, 1884).
The Confession of Faith […] First Agreed upon by the Assembly of Divines at Westminster (Glasgow, 1669).
Constable, Henry, *The Duration and Nature of Future Punishment* (London: Kellaway, 1876).
Coppin, Richard, *Divine Teachings* (London, 1653).
Coward, William, *Second Thoughts Concerning Human Soul […]* (London, 1702).
Crouzel, Henri, 'L'Hades et la Gehenne selon Origene', *Gregorianum* 59 (1978), pp. 291–329.
Cullman, Oscar, *Immortality of the Soul or Resurrection of the Dead?* (New York, NY: Macmillan, 1958).
Cupitt, Don, *Crisis of Moral Authority* (London: SCM Press, 1985).
Cyprian, *An Address to Demetrianus*, trans. Robert Ernest Wallis, in Alexander Roberts, James Donaldson and A. Cleveland Coxe (eds), *Ante-Nicene Fathers*, vol. 5 (Buffalo, NY: Christian Literature, 1886). Available at http://www.newadvent.org/fathers/050705.htm.
Daley, Brian E., *The Hope of the Early Church* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Academic, 2010).
Dalton, William Joseph, *Christ's Proclamation to the Spirits: A Study of I Peter 3:18–4.6* (Rome: Pontificio Istituto Biblico, 1989).
Dante, *Inferno*, ed. and trans. Robin Kirkpatrick (London: Penguin, 2006).
—— *Purgatorio*, ed. and trans. Robin Kirkpatrick (London: Penguin, 2007).
—— *The Divine Comedy*, trans. A. S. Kline (n.p.: Poetry in Translation, 2014). Available at http://www.poetryintranslation.com/PITBR/Italian/Danthome.htm.
Darwin, Charles, *The Autobiography of Charles Darwin 1809–1882*, ed. Nora Barlow (London: Collins, 1958).
Defoe, Daniel, *An Enquiry into the Case of Mr Asgil's General Translation* (London, 1704).
Delp, Robert W., 'Andrew Jackson Davis: prophet of American spiritualism', *Journal of American History* 54 (1967), pp. 43–56.
Denison, Stephen, *A Compendious Catechisme […]* (London, 1621).
—— *The Doctrine of Both the Sacraments: To Witte, Baptisme, and the Supper of the Lord […]* (London, 1621).
Disley, Emma, 'Degrees of glory: Protestant doctrine and the concept of rewards hereafter', *Journal of Theological Studies* 42 (1991), pp. 77–105.
Dixon, Leif, *Practical Predestinarians in England, c.1590–1640* (Farnham: Ashgate, 2014).
Dodwell, Henry, *An Epistolary Discourse Proving […] That the Soul is a Principle Naturally Mortal* (London, 1706).
—— *A Preliminary Defence of the Epistolary Discourse, Concerning the Distinction between Soul and Spirit* (London, 1707).
Douie, D., 'John XXII and the Beatific Vision', *Dominican Studies* 3 (1950), pp. 157–74.
Doyle, Arthur Conan, 'Fairies photographed', *Strand Magazine* (December 1920), pp. 463–8.
—— *The Wanderings of a Spiritualist* (New York, NY: George H. Doran, 1921).
—— *The Coming of the Fairies* (New York, NY: George H. Doran, 1922).
—— *Memories and Adventures* (Boston, MA: Little, Brown, 1924). Available at http://gutenberg.net.au/ebooks14/1400681h.html#ch-09.
Drexelius, Hieremy, *A Pleasant and Profitable Treatise of Hell* (n.p., 1668).
[Dunton, John], *An Essay Proving We Shall Know Our Friends in Heaven* (London, 1698).

Dyer, George J., *Limbo: Unsettled Questions* (New York, NY: Sheed & Ward, 1964).
Eco, Umberto, *The Search for the Perfect Language* (Oxford: Blackwell, 1995).
Edwards, Jonathan, 'Sermon II: sinners in the hands of an angry God', in *The Works of Jonathan Edwards*, vol. 2, ed. Edward Hickman (Edinburgh: Banner of Truth, 1974). Available at http://www.ccel.org/ccel/edwards/works2.
——'Sermon XI: the eternity of hell torments', in *The Works of Jonathan Edwards*, vol. 2, ed. Edward Hickman (Edinburgh: Banner of Truth, 1974). Available at http://www.ccel.org/ccel/edwards/works2.
Elliott, J. K. (ed.), *The Apocryphal New Testament: A Collection of Apocryphal Christian Literature in an English Translation* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1993).
Engelbrecht, John, *The Divine Visions of John Engelbrecht […]*, trans. Francis Okeley (Northampton, 1780).
Enright, D. J., *The Oxford Book of Death* (Oxford: Oxford University Press,1983).
Farrar, F. W., *Eternal Hope* (New York, NY: E. P. Dutton, 1878).
Ferguson, Marilyn, *The Aquarian Conspiracy: Personal and Social Transformation in the 1980s* (Los Angeles, CA: J. P. Tarcher, 1980).
Feuerbach, Ludwig, *The Essence of Christianity*, trans. George Eliot [Marian Evans] (London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trübner, 1890).
Fitzgerald, Alan D. (ed.), *Augustine through the Ages: An Encyclopedia* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1999).
Freud, Sigmund, 'Lecture XXXV: a philosophy of life', in Sigmund Freud, *New Introductory Lectures on Psycho-analysis* (London: Hogarth Press, 1933).
Froom, Le Roy Edwin, *The Conditionalist Faith of Our Fathers* (Washington DC: Review & Herald, 1965–6).
Gearing, William, *A Prospect of Heaven: Or, A Treatise of the Happiness of the Saints in Glory* (London, 1673).
Goodwin, Thomas, *A Discourse of the Punishment of Sin in Hell; Demonstrating the Wrath of God to Be the Immediate Cause Thereof* (London, 1680).
Gowland, Angus, 'The problem of early modern melancholy', *Past and Present* 191 (2006), pp. 77–120.
Gregory of Nyssa, *On Infants' Early Deaths*, trans. William Moore and Henry Austin Wilson, in Philip Schaff and Henry Wace (eds), *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers: Second Series*, vol. 5 (Buffalo, NY: Christian Literature, 1893).
Gregory the Great, *Morals on the Book of Job by St Gregory the Great, Translated with Notes and Indices*, trans. James Bliss, 3 vols (Oxford and London: John Henry Parker and J. G. F. and J. Rivington, 1844).
—— *The Dialogues of Saint Gregory, Surnamed the Great: Pope of Rome and the First of That Name*, ed. Edmund G. Gardner (London: Philip Lee Warner, 1911).
Haeckel, Ernst, *The Riddle of the Universe* (London: Watts, 1929).
[Hallywell, Henry], *A Private Letter of Satisfaction to a Friend* (n.p., 1667).
Hanegraaff, Wouter J., *New Age Religion and Western Culture* (New York, NY: State University of New York, 1998).
Hardy, Thomas, *Tess of the d'Urbervilles* (London: Macmillan, 1928).
Harrison, Peter, 'Animal souls, metempsychosis, and theodicy', *Journal of the History of Philosophy* 31 (1993), pp. 519–44.
—— *The Territories of Science and Religion* (Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press, 2015).
Hartshorne, Charles, *A Natural Theology for Our Time* (LaSalle, IL: Open Court, 1967).

Hennessey, Lawrence, 'The place of saints and sinners after death', in Charles Kannengiesser and William L. Petersen (eds), *Origen of Alexandria: His World and his Legacy* (Notre Dame, IN: University of Notre Dame Press, 1988), pp. 295–312.

Herbert, Thomas, *Some Yeares Travels into Divers Parts of Africa and Asia the Great* (London, 1665).

Hesiod, *The Homeric Hymns, and Homerica*, trans. Hugh G. Evelyn-White (London: Heinemann, 1914).

Hesketh, Ian, 'The story of big history', *History of the Present* 4 (2014), pp. 171–202.

Hill, Christopher, *The World Turned Upside Down* (Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1975).

Hobbes, Thomas, *Leviathan* (London: Dent, 1973).

Hody, Humphrey, *The Resurrection of the (Same) Body Asserted* (London, 1694).

Homer, *The Odyssey*, trans. A. T. Murray (Cambridge, MA, and London: Harvard University Press and Heinemann, 1919).

——*The Iliad*, trans. A. T. Murray (Cambridge, MA, and London: Harvard University Press and Heinemann, 1924).

Horbery, Matthew, *An Enquiry into the Scripture-doctrine Concerning the Duration of Future Punishments […]* (London, 1744).

Hughes, Ann, *Gangraena and the Struggle for the English Revolution* (New York, NY: Oxford University Press, 2004).

Huxley, Aldous, *The Perennial Philosophy* (London: Chatto & Windus, 1947).

Huxley, Thomas Henry, *Life and Letters of Thomas Henry Huxley*, ed. Leonard Huxley, 2 vols (London: Macmillan, 1908).

Hyman, Gavin, *A Short History of Atheism* (London: I.B.Tauris, 2010).

Iannucci, Amilcare A., 'Dante's limbo: at the margins of orthodoxy', in James Miller (ed.), *Dante and the Unorthodox: The Aesthetics of Transgression* (Waterloo, Ontario: Wilfrid Laurier University Press, 2005), pp. 63–82.

International Theological Commission, 'The hope of salvation for infants who die without being baptised' (2007). Available at http://www.vatican.va/roman_curia/congregations/cfaith/cti_documents/rc_con_cfaith_doc_20070419_un-baptised-infants_en.html.

James, M. R. (ed. and trans.), *The Apocryphal New Testament* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1953).

Jerome, St, *Commentary on Ecclesiastes*, ed. and trans. Richard J. Goodrich and David J. D. Miller (New York, NY, and Mahwah, NJ: Newman Press, 2012).

Johnstone, P. De Lacy, *Muhammad and His Power* (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1901).

Joyce, James, *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man* (New York, NY: B. W. Huebsch, 1916). Available at http://www.gutenberg.org/files/4217/4217-h/4217-h.htm#chap03.

Kalush, William, and Larry Sloman, *The Secret Life of Harry Houdini: The Making of America's First Superhero* (New York, NY: Atria, 2006).

Kant, Immanuel, *Dreams of a Spirit Seer, Illustrated by Dreams of Metaphysics* (London: S. Sonnenschein, 1900).

——*Critique of Practical Reason*, trans. Lewis White Beck (Indianapolis, IN: Bobbs–Merrill Co., 1956).

——*On History*, trans. Lewis White Beck (Indianapolis, IN: Bobbs–Merrill Co., 1957).

Katz, Steven T., *Mysticism and Language* (New York, NY: Oxford University Press, 1992).

Kelly, J. N. D., *Early Christian Creeds* (London: Longman, 1972).

Ketley, Joseph (ed.), *The Two Liturgies, AD 1549, and AD 1552* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1844).

Kontou, Tatiana, and Sarah Willburn (eds), *The Ashgate Research Companion to Nineteenth-century Spiritualism and the Occult* (Farnham: Ashgate, 2012).

Kosior, Wojciech, 'The underworld or its ruler? Some remarks on the concept of Sheol in the Hebrew Bible', *Polish Journal of Biblical Research* 13 (2014), pp. 29–40.

Kraus, Wolfgang, and Martin Kraus, 'On eschatology in Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians', in Jan G. van der Watt, *Eschatology of the New Testament and Some Related Documents* (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2011), pp. 197–224.

Lake, Peter, *The Boxmaker's Revenge: 'Orthodoxy', 'Heterodoxy' and the Politics of the Parish in Early Stuart London* (Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 2001).

Lang, Bernhard, *Meeting in Heaven: Modernising the Christian Afterlife, 1600–2000* (Frankfurt: Peter Lang, 2011).

Le Goff, Jacques, *The Birth of Purgatory* (Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press, 1981).

Le Guin, Ursula, *The Earthsea Quartet* (London: Penguin, 1993).

Lea, Henry Charles, *A History of Auricular Confession and Indulgences in the Latin Church*, 3 vols (Philadelphia, PA: Lea Brothers, 1896).

Leibniz, G. W., *Theodicy: Essays on the Goodness of God, the Freedom of Man and the Origin of Evil*, trans. E. M. Huggard (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1951).

Lewis E. E., *A Report of the Mysterious Noises, Heard in the House of Mr John D. Fox, in Hydesville, Arcadia, Wayne County [...]* (Canandaigua, NY: E. E. Lewis, 1848).

Lindberg, Carter (ed.), *The European Reformations Sourcebook* (Oxford: Blackwell, 2000).

Lindsey, Hal, *The Late Great Planet Earth* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1970).

Locke, John, *An Essay Concerning Humane Understanding* (London, 1690).

—— *Writings on Religion*, ed. Victor Nuovo (Oxford: Clarendon, 2002).

Lossky, Vladimir, *The Mystical Theology of the Eastern Church* (Crestwood, NY: St Vladimir's Seminary Press, 1976).

Louth, Andrew, *The Origins of the Christian Mystical Tradition: From Plato to Denys* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2007).

Love, Christopher, *Hells Terror: Or, A Treatise of the Torments of the Damned, as a Preservative against Security* (London, 1653).

Lupton, William, *The Eternity of Future Punishment Proved and Vindicated* (Oxford, 1708).

[Luther, Martin], *An Exposition of Salomons Booke, Called Ecclesiastes or the Preacher* (London, 1573).

Luther, Martin, *Works of Martin Luther with Introduction and Notes*, vol. 1, ed. and trans. Adolph Spaeth (Philadelphia, PA: A. J. Holman, 1915).

——*A Compend of Luther's Theology*, ed. Hugh T. Kerr (Philadelphia, PA: Westminster Press, 1943).

——*Luther's Works*, vol. 4: *Lectures on Genesis Chapters 21–25*, ed. Jaroslav Pelikan and Walter A. Hansen (St Louis, MO: Concordia Publishing House, 1964).

McCarthy, Cormac, *The Road* (London: Picador, 2007)

MacCulloch, J. A., *The Harrowing of Hell: A Comparative Study of an Early Christian Doctrine* (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1930).

McDannell, Colleen, and Bernhard Lang, *Heaven: A History* (New York, NY: Vintage, 1990).

McGinn, Bernard, John J. Collins and Stephen J. Stein (eds), *The Encyclopedia of Apocalypticism* (New York, NY, and London: Continuum, 1998).

McGrath, Alister E., *Reformation Thought: An Introduction* (Oxford: Blackwell, 1993).

——*Luther's Theology of the Cross* (Chichester: Wiley-Blackwell, 2011).

McLaughlin, Megan, *Consorting with Saints: Prayers for the Dead in Early Medieval France* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1994).

Martens, Peter, 'Origen's doctrine of pre-existence and the opening chapters of Genesis', *Zeitschrift für Antikes Christentum* 16 (2013), pp. 516–49.

Marx, Karl, and Friedrich Engels, *The Marx–Engels Reader*, ed. Robert C. Tucker (New York, NY: Norton, 1978).

'Medieval sourcebook: twelfth ecumenical council: Lateran IV 1215', in H. J. Schroeder (ed.), *Disciplinary Decrees of the General Councils: Text, Translation and Commentary* (St Louis, MO: B. Herder, 1937). pp. 236–96. Available at http://www.fordham.edu/halsall/basis/lateran4.asp.

Milikowsky, Chaim, 'Which Gehenna? Retribution and eschatology in the synoptic Gospels and in early Jewish texts', *New Testament Studies* 34 (1988), pp. 238–49.

Milton, John, *The Works of John Milton*, ed. Frank A. Patterson et al., 18 vols (New York, NY: Columbia University Press, 1931–8).

Moltmann, Jürgen, 'Resurrection as hope', *Harvard Theological Review* 61 (1968), pp. 129–47.

Moore, R. Laurence, 'Spiritualism and science: reflections on the first decade of the spirit rappings', *American Quarterly* 24 (1972), pp. 474–500.

——'Spiritualism', in Edwin S. Gaustad (ed.), *The Rise of Adventism: Religion and Society in Mid-nineteenth-century America* (New York, NY: Harper & Row, 1974), pp. 79–103.

More, Henry, *The Immortality of the Soul, so Farre Forth as It Is Demonstrable from the Knowledge of Nature and the Light of Reason* (London, 1659).

—— *A Modest Inquiry into the Mystery of Iniquity […]* (London, 1664).

More, Thomas, *The Yale Edition of the Complete Works of St Thomas More*, vol. 6: *A Dialogue Concerning Heresies*, eds. Thomas M. C. Lawler, Richard C. Marius and Germain Marc'hadour (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1981).

Muggleton, Lodowick, *The Acts of the Witnesses of the Spirit* (London, 1699).

Nauta, Lodi, 'The pre-existence of the soul in medieval Europe', *Recherches de théologie ancienne et medievale* 63 (1996), pp. 93–135.

The New English Hymnal (Norwich: Canterbury Press, 1986).

Nickelsburg, George W. E., *1 Enoch 1: A Commentary on the Book of Enoch Chapters 1–36; 81–108* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress Press, 2001).

Noakes, Richard, 'The sciences of spiritualism in Victorian Britain: possibilities and problems', in Tatiana Kontou and Sarah Willburn (eds), *The Ashgate Research Companion to Nineteenth-century Spiritualism and the Occult* (Farnham: Ashgate, 2012).

'Objects of the society', *Proceedings of the Society for Psychical Research* 1 (1882), pp. 3–6.

O'Ceallaigh, G. C., 'Dating the commentaries of Nicodemus', *Harvard Theological Review* 56 (1963), pp. 21–58.

Origen, *On First Principles*, trans. G. W. Butterworth (Gloucester, MA: Peter Smith, 1973).

O[verton], R[ichard], *Man Wholly Mortal […]* (London, 1655).

Owen, Alex, *The Darkened Room: Women, Power, and Spiritualism in Late Nineteenth Century England* (London: Virago, 1989).

Pelagius, *Pelagius's Commentary on St Paul's Epistle to the Romans*, trans. Theodore de Bruyn (Oxford: Clarendon, 1993).

Phelps, Elizabeth Stuart, *The Gates Ajar* (Boston, MA: Fields, Osgood, 1869).

—— *The Gates Ajar*, ed. Helen Sootin Smith (Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1964).
Plato, *The Collected Dialogues of Plato, Including the Letters*, ed. Edith Hamilton and Huntington Cairns (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1961).
Pocock, J. G. A., 'Time, history and eschatology in the thought of Thomas Hobbes', in J. H. Elliott and H. G. Koenigsberger (eds), *The Diversity of History* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1949), pp. 149–98.
Podmore, Frank, *Modern Spiritualism: A History and a Criticism*, 2 vols (London: Methuen, 1902).
Porter, Katherine H., *Through a Glass Darkly: Spiritualism in the Browning Circle* (Lawrence, KS: University of Kansas Press, 1958).
Powell, J. H., *Spiritualism; Its Facts and Phases* (London: F. Pitman, 1864).
Priestley, Joseph, *An History of the Corruptions of Christianity*, 2 vols (Birmingham: J. Johnson, 1882).
Quistorp, H., *Calvin's Doctrine of the Last Things* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2009).
Rahner, Karl, *Theological Investigations*, vol. 4: *More Recent Writings* (London: Darton, Longman & Todd, 1974).
——'Experiences of a Catholic theologian', *Theological Studies* 61 (2000), pp. 3–15.
Rankin, David, *Athenagoras: Philosopher and Theologian* (Farnham: Ashgate, 2009).
Rauschenbusch, Walter, *Christianity and the Social Crisis* (London: Macmillan, 1907).
Reeve, John, and Lodowick Muggleton, *Joyful News from Heaven* (London, 1658).
Rex, Richard, 'Thomas More and the heretics: statesman or fanatic?', in George M. Logan (ed.), *The Cambridge Companion to Thomas More* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2011), pp. 93–115.
Ricciardo, Salvatore, 'Robert Boyle on God's "experiments": resurrection, immortality and mechanical philosophy', *Intellectual History Review* 24 (2014), pp. 1–17.
Rix, Robert, *William Blake and the Cultures of Radical Christianity* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2007).
Ross, Alexander, *The Philosophicall Touch-stone [...]* (London, 1645).
Rowe, Elizabeth Singer, *Friendship in Death: In Twenty Letters from the Dead to the Living [...]* (London, 1728).
Rowell, Geoffrey, *Hell and the Victorians* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1974).
Ruether, Rosemary Radford, *Sexism and God-talk: Toward a Feminist Theology* (Boston, MA: Beacon Press, 1983).
Saler, Michael, 'Modernity and enchantment: a historical review', *American Historical Review* 111 (2006), pp. 692–716.
Salmon, Joseph, *Heights in Depths* (London, 1651).
Schaff, Philip (ed.), *The Creeds of Christendom*, 3 vols (New York, NY: Harper, 1919).
Shaffern, Robert W., 'Learned discussions of indulgences for the dead in the Middle Ages', *Church History* 61 (1992), pp. 367–81.
——'The medieval theology of indulgences', in Robert N. Swanson (ed.), *Promissory Notes on the Treasury of Merits in Late Medieval Europe* (Leiden: Brill, 2006), pp. 11–36.
Schleiermacher, Friedrich, *The Christian Faith* (Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1928).
Schmitt, Charles B., 'Perrenial [*sic*] philosophy from Agostino Steuco to Leibniz', *Journal of the History of Ideas* 27 (1966), pp. 505–32.
Schwab, Raymond, *The Oriental Renaissance: Europe's Rediscovery of India and the East* (New York, NY: Columbia University Press, 1984).

Shower, John, *Death a Deliverance: Or, a Funeral Discourse, Preach'd (in Part) on the Decease of Mrs Mary Doolittle […]* (London, 1693).

——*Heaven and Hell: Or the Unchangeable State of Happiness or Misery for All Mankind in Another World* (London, 1700).

Smith, Nigel (ed.), *A Collection of Ranter Writings from the Seventeenth Century* (London: Junction, 1993).

Smith, Paul, 'The Cottingley fairies: the end of a legend', in Peter Narváez (ed.), *The Good People: New Fairylore Essays* (Lexington, KY: University Press of Kentucky, 1997), pp. 371–405.

Spierenburg, Pieter, *The Spectacle of Suffering: Executions and the Evolution of Repression* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984).

[Stafford, Richard], *A Discourse of the Misery of Hell, and Happiness of Heaven* (London, 1697).

Steadman, John M., 'Milton and patristic tradition: the quality of hell-fire', *Anglia* 76 (1958), pp. 116–28.

[Stegmann, Joachim], *Brevis disquisitio: Or, a Brief Enquiry Touching a Better Way […] to Refute Papists, and Reduce Protestants to Certainty and Unity in Religion* (London, 1653).

Strong, William, *The Worm That Dyeth Not, or, Hell Torments, in the Certainty and Eternity of Them* (London, 1672).

Studer, Basil, 'Der Abstieg Christi in die Unterwelt bei Augustinus von Hippo', in I. Scicolone (ed.), *Psallendum: miscellanea di studi in onore del Prof. Jordi Pinelli i Pons, OSB* (Rome: Pontificio Ateneo Sant'Anselmo, 1992), pp. 267–74.

Swedenborg, Emanuel, *Heaven and Hell: The Portable New Century Edition*, trans. George F. Dole (West Chester, PA: Swedenborg Foundation, 2002).

Swinden, Tobias, *An Enquiry into the Nature and Place of Hell* (London, 1727).

Teilhard de Chardin, Pierre, *The Phenomenon of Man* (London: Harper & Row, 1965).

Teske, R. J., 'Saint Augustine on the incorporeality of the soul', *Modern Schoolman* 60 (1983), pp. 220–35.

Tindal, Matthew, *Christianity as Old as the Creation* (London, 1731).

Tindale, Willyam [*sic*], *The New Testament Diligently Corrected and Compared with the Greek* (Antwerp, 1534).

Trumbower, Jeffrey A., *Rescue for the Dead: The Posthumous Salvation of Non-Christians in Early Christianity* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2001).

Turner, John, *Justice Done to Human Souls […]* (London 1706).

Turner, Ralph V., 'Descendit ad inferos: medieval views on Christ's descent into hell and the salvation of the ancient just', *Journal of the History of Ideas* 27 (1966), pp. 173–94.

Tyndale, William, *An Answer to Sir Thomas More's Dialogue*, ed. Henry Walter (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1850).

Vincent, Thomas, *Fire and Brimstone from Heaven, from Earth, from Hell […]* (London, 1670).

Walker, D. P., *The Decline of Hell: Seventeenth-century Discussions of Eternal Torment* (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1964).

——'Eternity and the afterlife', *Journal of the Warburg and Courtauld Institutes* 27 (1964), pp. 241–50.

Walmsley, Peter, 'Whigs in heaven: Elizabeth Rowe's *Friendship in Death*', *Eighteenth-century Studies* 44 (2011), pp. 315–30.

W[arren], E[dward], *No Praeexistence: Or a Brief Dissertation against the Hypothesis of Humane Souls, Living in a State Antecedaneous to This* (London, 1667).

Watts, Isaac, *Death and Heaven: Or the last Enemy Conquer'd, and Separate Spirits Made Perfect* (London, 1722).

——*The World to Come: Or, Discourses on the Joys or Sorrows of Departed Souls at Death […]* (London, 1739).

Waugh, Evelyn, *The Loved One: An Anglo-American Tragedy* (Boston, MA: Little, Brown, 1948).

Weber, Max, 'Science as a vocation' (1918) [published as 'Wissenschaft als Beruf', in Max Weber, *Gesammelte Aufsaetze zur Wissenschaftslehre* (Tübingen: J. C. B. Mohr, 1922), pp. 524–55]. Available at www.wisdom.weizmann.ac.il/~oded/X/WeberScienceVocation.pdf.

——*The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism*, trans. Talcott Parsons (New York, NY, and London: Charles Scribner's Sons and George Allen & Unwin, 1950).

Wheeler, Michael, *Death and the Future Life in Victorian Literature and Theology* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1990).

Whiston, William, *Sermons and Essays […]* (London, 1709).

——*Astronomical Principles of Religion Natural and Reveal'd in Nine Parts […]* (London, 1717).

——*The Eternity of Hell Torments Considered […]* (London, 1740).

Williams, George Hunston, *The Radical Reformation* (Philadelphia, PA: Westminster Press, 1962).

Wood, J. G., *Man and Beast: Here and Hereafter* (London: Gibbings, 1903).

Yates, John, *Gods Arraignment of Hypocrites* (London, 1615).

Index

Abelard, Peter 33, 41–2
abominable fancy 137–9
Abraham's Bosom 2, 15, 16, 29
  and Aquinas 42–3
  and Augustine 39–40
  and Calvin 100–1
Acheron river 26–7, 47
agnosticism 177, 178
Albert the Great 26
Albrecht of Magdeburg and Mainz 91, 92–3
Alexander of Hales 83
Ambrose 41, 81
Anabaptists 100, 101
Anastasios of Sinai 41
ancient Greece 2, 3, 9–11, 37
angels 4, 15, 18–20, 22, 161
  and Swedenborg 164–5, 167
Anglicanism 54, 59, 99
animals 95, 103, 172
annihilationism 139, 142–4, 145, 149
Anselm of Canterbury 32–3
apocalypse 72–3, 186–7, 189–90
Apocalypse of Baruch 14
Apocalypse of Paul 18–22
Apologia (Apology) (Pomponazzi) 95
Aquinas, Thomas 29, 33–4, 42–4, 55, 89
  and cannibalism 68
  and Purgatory 76–7
  and the soul 54, 65–6
Arcana coelestia (Heavenly mysteries) (Swedenborg) 162
Aristotle 65, 95
Asgill, John 110–12
atheism 146
Athenagoras 45–6, 60, 66–7
Augustine of Hippo, St 16, 17, 20, 38–41, 79–80
  and children 31–2, 33
  and Purgatory 80–1, 83, 85
  and resurrection 62–3, 64, 67
  and salvation 122, 123, 127
  and the soul 50, 53–4

baptism 27–8, 29, 30, 32, 33, 34
Barrett Browning, Elizabeth 175–6
Barth, Karl 118
Bauthumley, Jacob 104–5
Baxter, Richard 132, 133, 153–4
Beatific Vision 33, 34, 52, 55, 74–7
Bede 85–6
Benedict XII, Pope 74, 75, 76
Benedictus Deus (Blessed be God) 74, 75–6
Bernard of Clairvaux 42
Beveridge, William 135
Bible, the 17, 18, 20, 110, 149; *see also* New Testament; Old Testament
Blake, William 167–8
Blavatsky, Helena 182, 183
Blessed Damozel, The (Rossetti) 168
Blot, François-René 171
Blyth, Francis 141
body, the 3–4, 19, 74–5, 160–1
  and resurrection 45–6, 52–3, 56, 60, 61–5, 66–72
Boehme, Jacob 104
Bonaventure 28–9, 33, 89, 90
Bond, William 104
Book of Enoch 13, 14, 17, 18
Book of Ezra 14, 24
Booth, William 150
Boswell, James 159–60
Bowler, Henry 150
Boyle, Robert 69–70

Brandon, John 135
Browne, Thomas 153
Browning, Robert 175
Buddhism 53
Bullinger, Heinrich 101
Bunyan, John 133, 137
Burnet, Thomas 140, 161

Caelestius 31
Caesarius of Arles 82
Calvin, John 100–1, 120–1, 123–4, 136
Calvinists 54, 59, 107
Campbell, Archibald 130
cannibalism 68, 69, 70
Catholicism 54, 76, 94–5, 122, 123
Celsus 38
cemeteries 180–1
Chateaubriand, François-René 152
children 1, 128, 161, 167, 171
  and limbo 26, 28, 29, 29–34
Christ *see* Jesus Christ
Christadelphians 117
Christian, David 190
Christianity 2–5, 16–17, 72–3
  and resurrection 58–60, 63–5
  and the soul 45–6, 48–50, 52, 54
  see also Catholicism; Protestantism
Christianity as Old as the Creation (Tindal) 141
Chrysostom, John 79
cities 20
Clarkson, Laurence 105
Clement of Alexandria 37, 81
Clement the Scot 41
Clement VI, Pope 89
Coleridge, Samuel Taylor 146–7
Compendium theologiae (Compendium of theology) (Aquinas) 42, 68
Conan Doyle, Sir Arthur 183–5
Constable, Henry 143–4
Coppin, Richard 104
cosmology 142–3, 149–50
Council of Florence 84
Council of Sens 42
Council of Sirmium 38
Coward, William 114
Crabbe, George 169
creationism 50, 53–4
Critique of Practical Reason (Kant) 130
Crusades, the 89
Cyprian 78–9

Dante Alighieri 18, 26–8, 34, 43–4, 86–8, 136
Darwin, Charles 178
Darwinism 143, 172
Davies, Paul 190
Davis, Andrew Jackson 169–70, 174
Day of Judgement 3, 13, 15, 18, 23, 25
  and Dodwell 113–14
  and Kant 131
  and resurrection 57–9
De civitate dei (The city of God) (Augustine) 62, 63, 137
De doctrina Christiana (On Christian doctrine) (Milton) 109
De fide et symbolo (On faith and the creed) (Augustine) 62
De haeresibus (On heresies) (Augustine) 40
De immortalitate animae (On the immortality of the soul) (Pomponazzi) 95
De libero arbitrio (On free choice of will) (Augustine) 32
De malo (On evil) (Aquinas) 34
De natura et origine animae (On the soul and its origin) (Augustine) 79
De resurrectione carnis (On the resurrection of the flesh) (Tertullian) 61
De resurrectione mortuorum (On the resurrection of the dead) (Athenagoras) 45–6
De statica medicina (On medical measurement) (Santorio) 70
De veritate (On truth) (Aquinas) 43
Death and Heaven (Watts) 156–7
deathbed 84
Demetrianus 78
Denison, Stephen 126
Descartes, René 163
Dialogue (More) 98
Divine Comedy (Dante) 18, 26–8

Dodwell, Henry 112–14
Doubt: Can These Dry Bones Live?, The (Bowler) 150
Drexel, Jeremias 127
Dunton, John 154–5
Duration and Nature of Future Punishment, The (Constable) 143–4
dystopianism 187

Eaton, Hubert 180–1
Edward VI, King 99, 100
Edwards, Jonathan 138, 141
Edwards, Thomas 102
Edwin of Northumbria, King 193
Elizabeth I, Queen 100
Elysian Fields 12, 16
enchanted worlds 184–6, 190–1
Enchiridion (Handbook) (Augustine) 79–80, 85
End of All Things, The (Kant) 131
Engelbrecht, John 165
Essence of Christianity, The (Feuerbach) 148–9
Eternal Hope (Farrar) 145
eternity 54–6
Evodius of Uzalis 38
evolution 187–8, 190

fairies 184, 185
Family of Love 104
Farrar, F. W. 137, 145–6
fathers 34–8
Ferguson, Marilyn 187
Feuerbach, Ludwig 148–9
fire 135–6
fish 66, 69
Forest Lawn Memorial Park, California 180–1
Fox sisters 173–4
Foxe, John 125
free will 129–30, 141, 163
Freud, Sigmund 149
Friendship in Death (Rowe) 155–6, 161
Frith, John 99

Gangraena (Gangrene) (Edwards) 102
gardens 18, 20
Gardner, Edward 184
Gates Ajar, The (Phelps) 170–1, 172
Gearing, William 154, 161
Gehenna 15, 23–5, 38, 116
Geneva Bible 23, 25
gentiles 37
Gladstone, William 147
God 4–5, 8–9, 12, 153, 161–2
  and justice 121–4
  and mercy 140–2
Goodwin, Thomas 134, 140–1
Gospel of Nicodemus 34–5, 36
Gregory of Nyssa 17, 29–30, 31
Gregory the Great, Pope 32, 40–1, 82–3
Griffiths, Frances 184

Hades 2, 9–11, 12, 13–16, 22–5
  and Christ 38–43
  and geography 130
  and Nicodemus 34–5
Haeckel, Ernst 178–9
Halley, Edmund 142
Hallywell, Henry 129–30
happiness 2, 66, 137–8
Hardy, Thomas 147–8
Hauffe, Friederike 174
heaven 2, 3–4, 110–12, 137–9, 153–62; *see also* Paradise
Heber, Reginald 168
Hebrews *see* Judaism
Hegel, G. W. F. 148
hell 2, 3–4, 23, 35–6, 86, 127
  and Aquinas 29
  and Dante 26–8
  and eternity 139–44
  and Hobbes 107–8
  and Muggleton 102–3
  and Swedenborg 166
  and torments 131–9, 152–3
  and Victorians 146–8, 149–50
  see also Gehenna; Hades; Sheol
heresies 101–2
Hill, Nicholas 54
Hinduism 53, 181–2

Hippolytus 15, 16
Hobbes, Thomas 106–8, 109
Hody, Humphrey 70–1
Home, D. D. 175
Homer 9–11
Horbery, Matthew 128, 139, 140
Houdini, Harry 177
human consciousness 187–8
Huxley, Aldous 181–2
Huxley, Thomas Henry 177, 178

Iliad (Homer) 9, 10
Immortality of the Soul, The (More) 54
In Heaven We Know Our Own (Blot) 171
India 181–2
indulgences 88–93
infants *see* children
Irenaeus 36–7
Isis Unveiled (Blavatsky) 182
Islam 18
Isles of the Blessed 2, 12, 47
iustitia Dei 122–3

James I, King 100
Jehovah's Witnesses 117
Jerome, St 23, 53
Jesus Christ 2, 3
  and Hades 16, 34–6, 37–8, 38–43
  and limbo 28, 29
  and Paradise 17, 18, 19–20
  and resurrection 56–60, 110–11
  and Second Coming 72–3, 188–9
John XXII, Pope 74–5
Johnson, Samuel 159–60
Josephus 15
Joyce, James 148
Judaism 7–8, 13, 16, 37
justice 4, 12–16, 60–2, 121–2

Kant, Immanuel 130–1, 150, 162, 178
karma 182–3
King James Bible 23, 25
Kingdom of God 106–7

Last Day *see* Day of Judgement
Late Great Planet Earth, The (Lindsey) 188–9
Layton, Henry 114
Le Guin, Ursula 185–6
Leibniz, Gottfried Wilhelm 128
Leo X, Pope 91, 92, 94–5
Leviathan (Hobbes) 106
Lewis, C. S. 185
Life of Johnson (Boswell) 159–60
Light and Dark Sides of God, The (Bauthumley) 104–5
limbo 2, 26–8, 29, 43–4
  and fathers 34–8
  and infants 29–34
Lindsey, Hal 188–9
Locke, John 107, 115–16, 142
Lombard, Peter 67–8
Love, Christopher 127, 132
Loved One, The (Waugh) 181
Lupton, William 120
Luther, Martin 23, 25, 92–3, 122–3, 136
  and the soul 96–7, 98
Lutherans 54, 59

Marcion 36
marriage 62, 63, 156, 165–6
martyrs 4
Marvell, Andrew 154
Marx, Karl 149
materialism 105–6, 148–9
Maurice, F. D. 139
McCarthy, Cormac 186
Meeting of a Family in Heaven, The (Blake) 167–8
melancholy 124–5
merits 88–9, 91
Milton, John 109, 135, 136
Moltmann, Jürgen 179
More, Henry 54, 119, 133–4, 160, 161
More, Sir Thomas 98
mortalism 97–8, 99–110, 113–18, 119–20
Muggleton, Lodowick 102–3
mysticism 64, 104

nature 167
New Testament 12, 34, 98–9
  and Gehenna 24–5

and Hades 22–3
and hell 139–40
and judgement 78
and patriarchs 36–7
and resurrection 56–9
Nicholas of Cusa 104
Niclaes, Hendrik 104

Odyssey (Homer) 10–11
Old Testament 7–9, 12–13, 20, 36–7
Origen 17, 23–4, 37–8, 51–3, 81
original sin 29, 31, 32–3, 124
Overton, Richard 108–9

paganism 24, 28, 34, 35, 37
and salvation 41–3, 44
pain of loss and sense 136–7
pantheism 103–5
papal bulls 74, 89, 94–5
Paradise 2, 16–20
Paradise Lost (Milton) 135
particular judgement 77–9, 128–9
patriarchs 34–8
payment 88–9, 90, 91–3
Pelagius 31
penance 83
perennial philosophy 181–2
Phaedo (Plato) 46–7
Phelps, Elizabeth Stuart 170–1, 172
Phenomenon of Man, The (Teilhard de Chardin) 188
philosophy 37, 41
Photographing Fairies (film) 185
Plato 41, 42, 46–50, 51, 114
Plotinus 64, 104
Pomponazzi, Pietro 95–6
pope, the 88, 89–91
post-apocalypse 186–7
prayer 84, 85
Prayer Book of Edward VI 99–100
predestination 123–6, 144
Priestley, Joseph 117
Protestantism 93, 97, 98, 99
and the Bible 110
and justice 121–2
and salvation 129–30
Psychopannychia (Calvin) 100
punishment 2, 4, 20–2, 25, 95–6
and children 30, 31–2
and Hades 13–16
and hell 132–3
and Locke 116
and proportionality 136
and Purgatory 80–1
Purgatory 2, 28–9, 43–4, 76–7, 80–8
and Hallywell 129–30
and indulgences 89–93
and mortalists 119–20
Pythagoras 114

Rahner, Karl 179–80
reason 140
Reasonableness of Christianity, as Delivered in the Scriptures, The (Locke) 116
Reeve, John 103
Reformation, the 44, 54, 59, 93
and radicalism 97, 100, 117
reincarnation 48, 49–50, 53, 182
religion 146–50, 176; *see also* Christianity; Hinduism; Judaism
Renaissance, the 95
Republic (Plato) 48
resurrection 45–6, 52–3, 56–66, 67–73
and Beatific Vision 74–6
and doubts 150–1
and Locke 116
reunion 154–6, 159–60, 171–2
reward 4, 13–16, 30, 95–6
Road, The (McCarthy) 186–7
Ross, Alexander 109
Rossetti, Christina 168–9
Rossetti, Dante Gabriel 168
Rowe, Elizabeth Singer 155–6, 161
Ruether, Rosemary 179

Sadducees 58
saints 4, 42–3
Saints' Everlasting Rest, The (Baxter) 132, 153
Salmon, Joseph 104
salvation 4, 41–4, 121–3, 126–7, 129–30, 144–6
Santorio Santorio 70

Satan 35–6
Schleiermacher, Friedrich 138–9, 144
science 69–71, 105, 162–3, 172, 190
  and spiritualism 176–7
seances 173, 174, 175–6
Second Epistle of Clement 78
Second Helvetic Confession, The (Bullinger) 101
Sentences (Lombard) 67–8
Septuagint 12
Seventh-day Adventists 117
sexuality 63, 69, 155, 166, 167–8
Sheol 2, 7–9, 12
Shower, John 131–2
Sic et non (Yes and no) (Abelard) 41–2
sin 13, 21, 30–3, 47, 82–3, 136; *see also* original sin
Sixtus IV, Pope 90
Society for Psychical Research 176–7, 183
Socrates 114
Some Physico-theological Considerations about the Possibility of the Resurrection (Boyle) 69
soul, the 2, 3–4, 19, 114, 117–18
  and Beatific Vision 74–7
  and Calvin 120–1
  and Hades 15, 16
  and Hobbes 106
  and immortality 45–54, 55–6, 63–6, 94–6, 172
  and judgement 77–8
  and Locke 115–16
  and Overton 108–9
  and sleep 96–7, 98–9, 100
spirits 7–8, 13–14, 162–3, 167
spiritualism 173–7, 183–4
spirituality 169–70
Stafford, Richard 132
Stegmann, Joachim 119
Stephen of Bourbon 89
Strauss, David Friedrich 178
Strong, William 120, 137
suffrages 84, 85, 90
Swedenborg, Emanuel 162–7, 169, 170, 178
Swinden, Tobias 127

Tartarus 2, 11, 25, 47
Teilhard de Chardin, Pierre 188
Tertullian 15–16, 53, 61–2, 67
Tess of the d'Urbervilles (Hardy) 147–8
Tetzel, Johann 91–2
Theodicy (Leibniz) 128
Theologia Christiana (Christian theology) (Abelard) 42
theosophy 182, 183, 184, 185, 187
Tillotson, John 70
time 54–6, 190
Tindal, Matthew 141
Toft, Mary 14
Tolkien, J. R. R. 185
traducianism 50, 51, 53–4
translation 110–12
Treasury of Merits 88–9, 91
Turner, John 112–13
Tyndale, William 98–9

underworld 20–2, 28–9; *see also* Hades; hell; Sheol
universalism 144–6
utopianism 187

Vincent, Thomas 135–6
Virgil 27–8
Vivkananda, Swami 181
Vulgate 23, 25

Watts, Isaac 156–8
Waugh, Evelyn 181
Weber, Max 184
Weigel, Valentine 104
Welträthsel, Die (The riddle of the universe) (Haekel) 178
Westminster Confession of Faith 119–20
Whiston, William 14, 142–3
William of Auvergne 83
Witch of Endor 7–8, 174
Wood, Rev J. G. 172
World to Come, The (Watts) 156
worms 137
Wright, Elsie 184

Yates, John 125

1. The spirit of Samuel appearing to Saul at the house of the Witch of Endor.

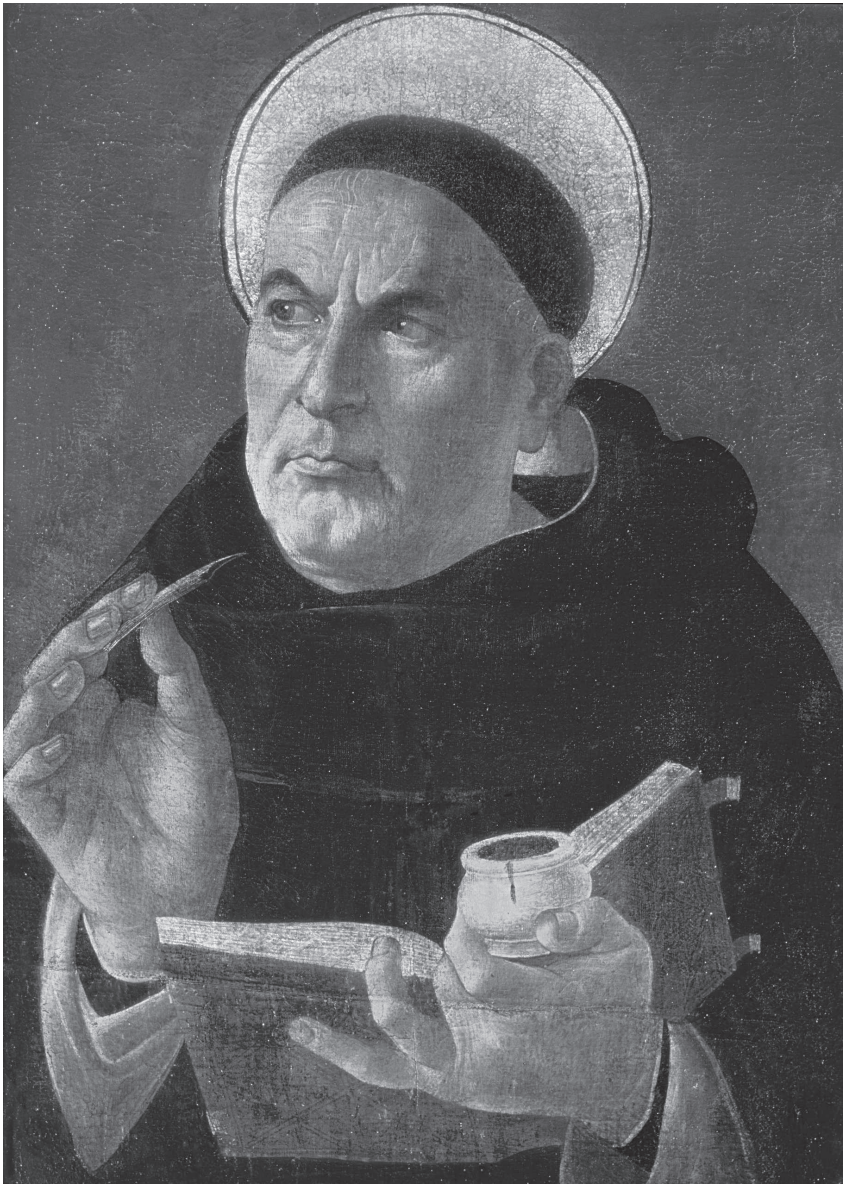
2. Charon ferrying the dead across the River Acheron.

4. The sores of Lazarus licked by dogs in the house of the rich man.

3. Hades and his wife Persephone, rulers of the underworld.

5. Heaven depicted as a garden.

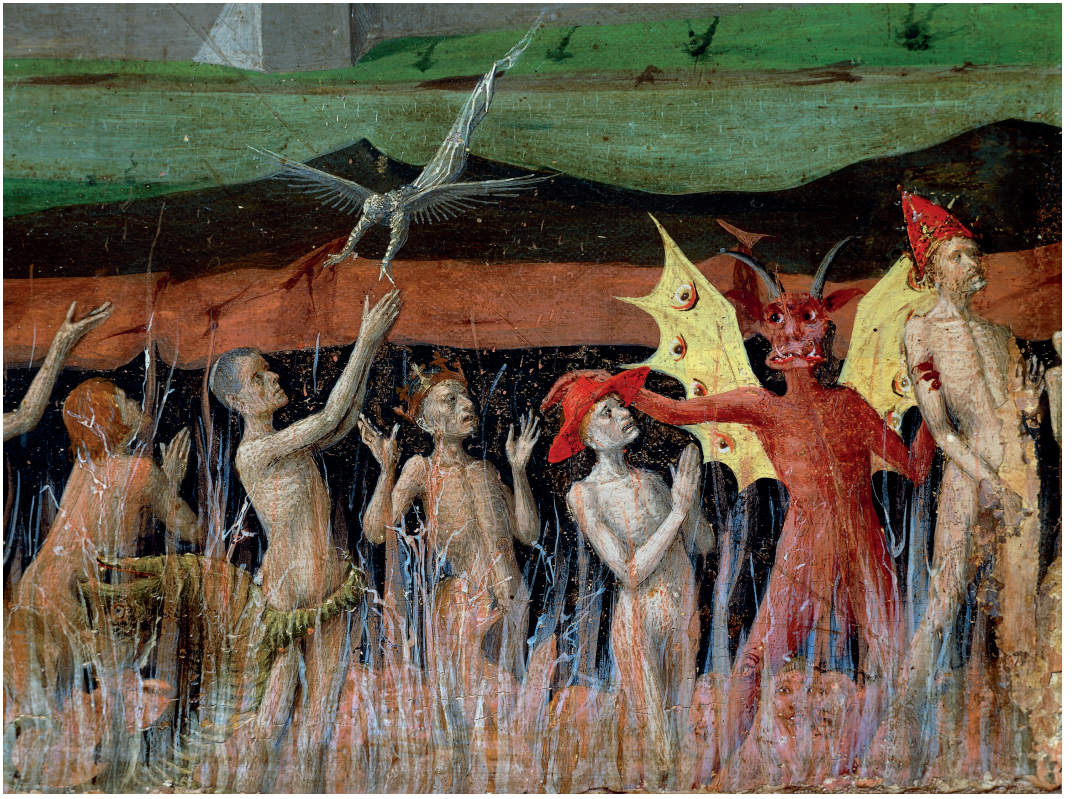
6. The heavenly city of St Augustine.



7. Thomas Aquinas (1225–74), 'the angelic doctor'.

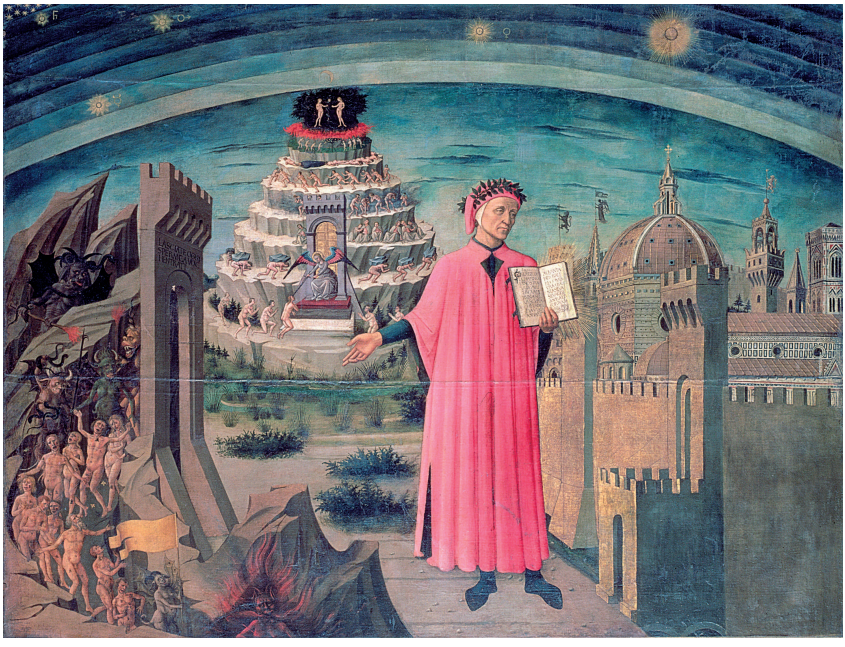
A go gia di cerchar dentro et intorno
La diuina foresta ispessa et uiua
chagliocchi temperaua il nouo giorno
Senza piu aspectar lasciai la riua
prendendo la campagna lento lento
su per lo suol che dogni parte uliua.

8. Miniature depicting Dante and Virgil in Purgatory.

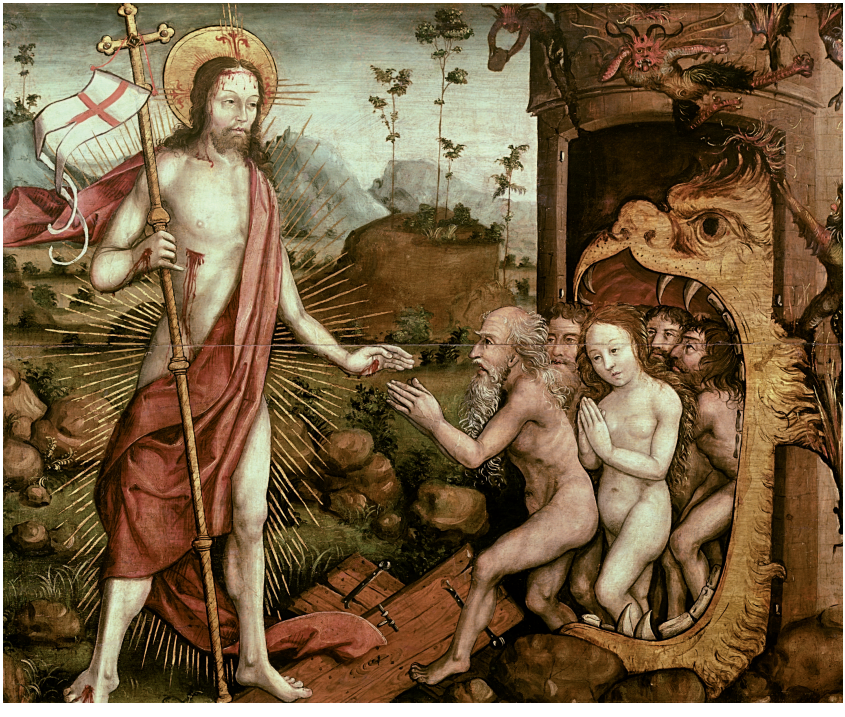


9. Souls purified through the fires of Purgatory.

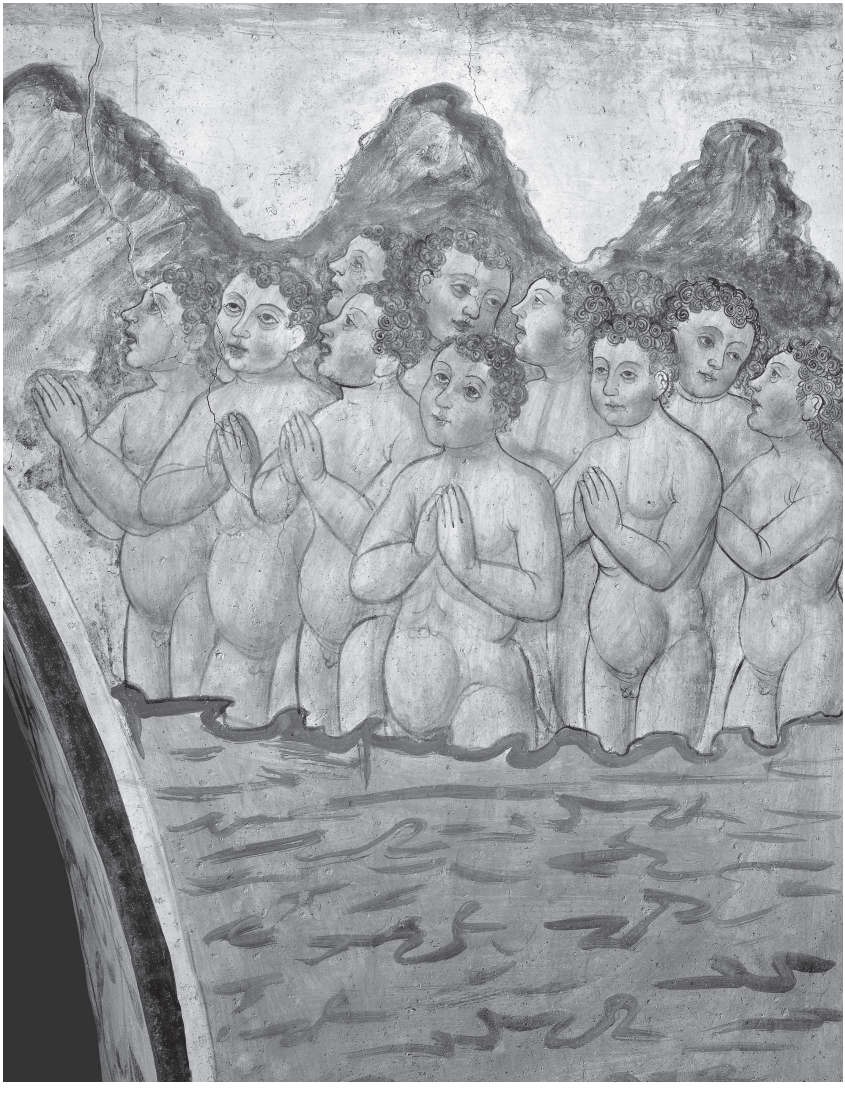
10. Souls passing through Purgatory on their way to Heaven.



11. Dante shown with a depiction of hell on the left, the seven terraces of Purgatory in the background, and the city of Florence on the right.



13. Christ descends into Limbo between his death and resurrection.



12. The limbo of the children.

14. The soul leaving the body accompanied by an angel.

15. Souls become 'physicalised' as bodies become 'spiritualised'.

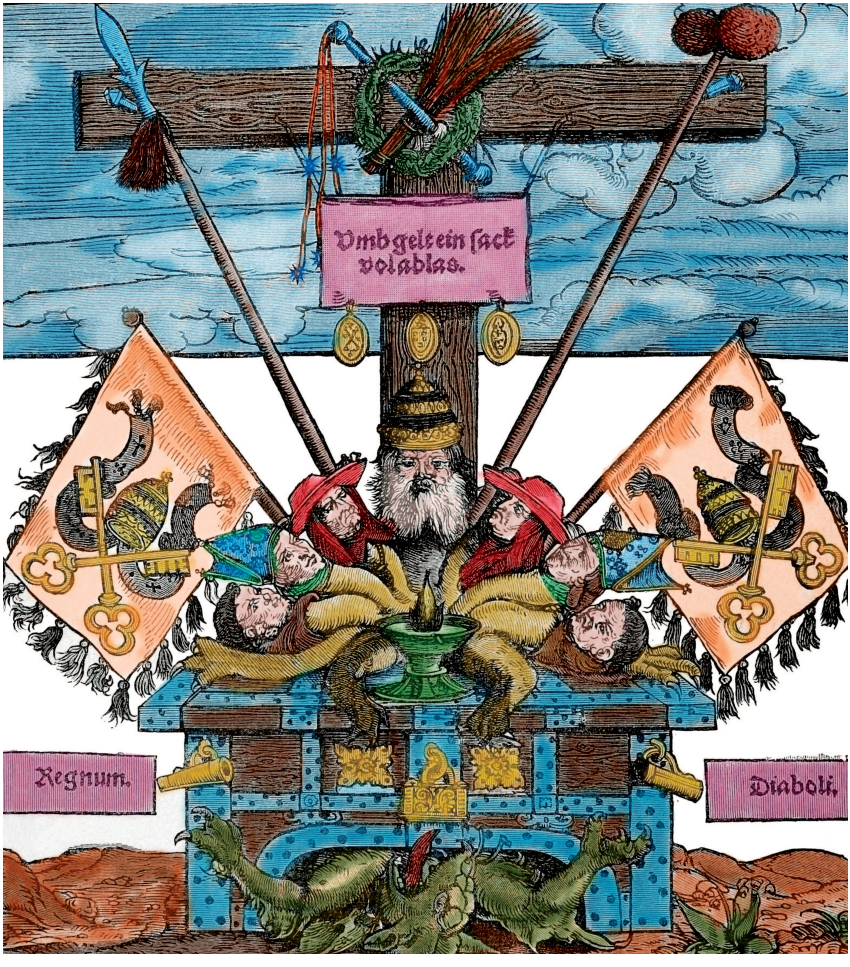
16. The resurrected Christ telling Mary Magdalene 'Touch me not'.

17. The dead rising from their graves on the Last Day.

18. 'The trumpets shall sound and the dead shall be raised.'

19. God surrounded by the saints and angels.

20. The heavenly choir.



21. The selling of indulgences depicted as '*Regnum Diaboli*' ('Reign of the Devil').

22. Martin Luther writing on the church door at Wittenburg in 1517.

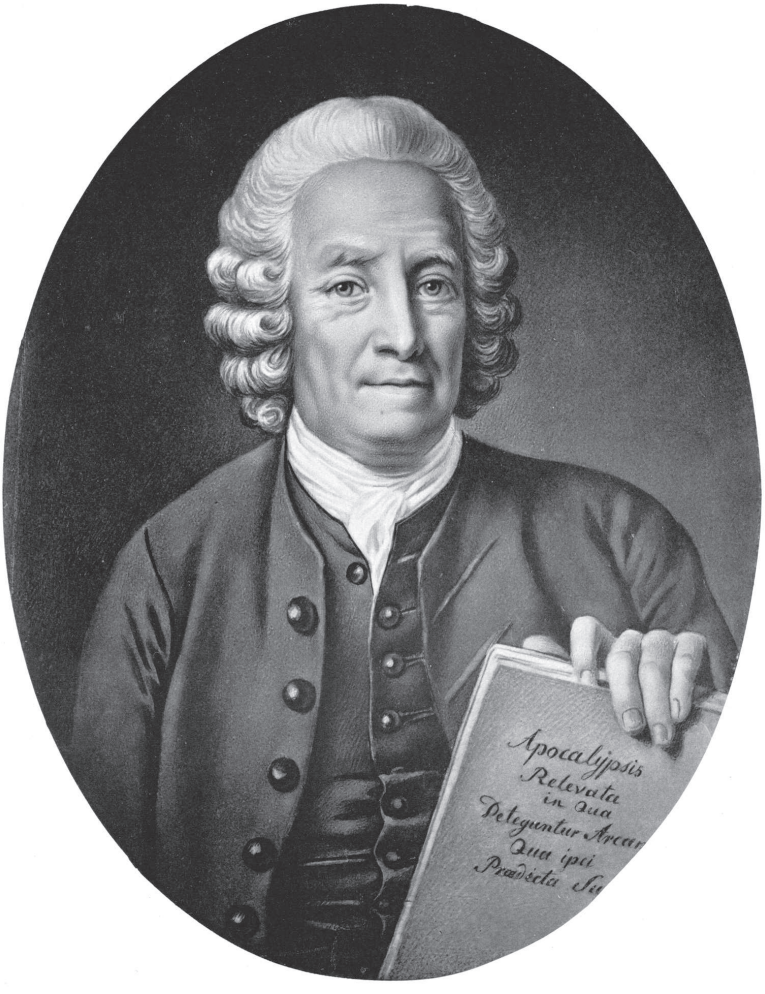
23. Elijah ascending into heaven without having first died.

24. The damned tortured in hell.

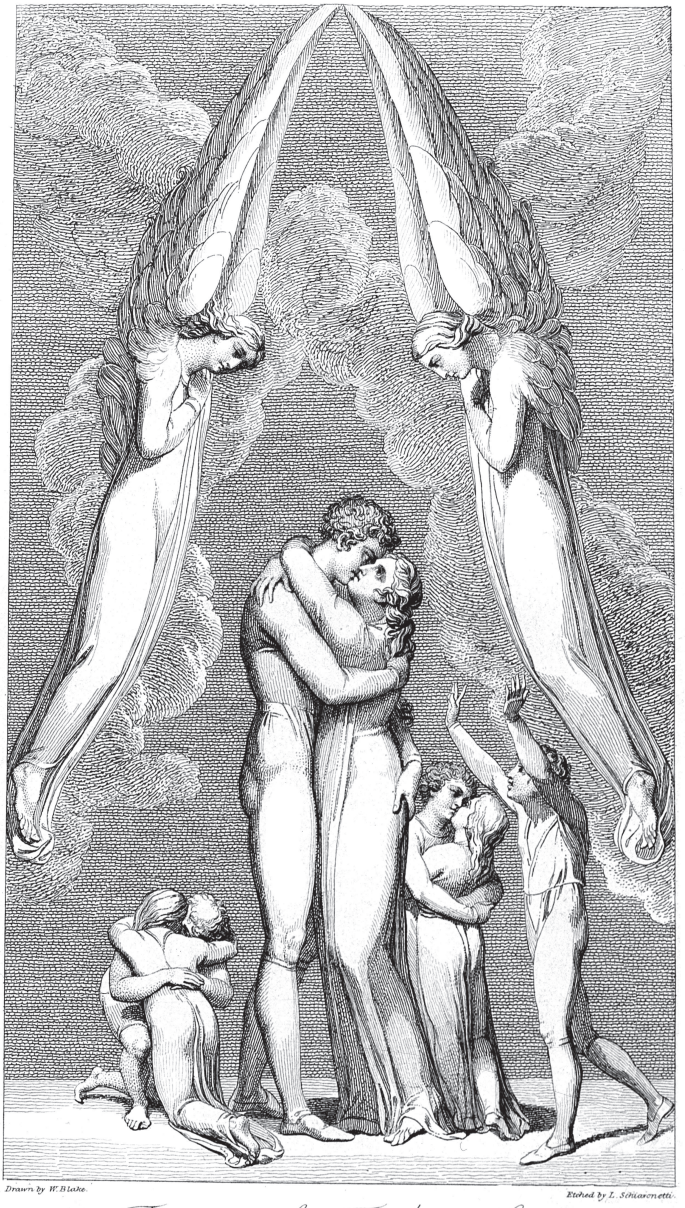
25. The good being led to heaven by an angel.

26. The Virgin Mary in glory surrounded by the heavenly society of apostles and angels.

27. Doubting the resurrection of the flesh.



28. The seer and visionary Emanuel Swedenborg (1688–1772).

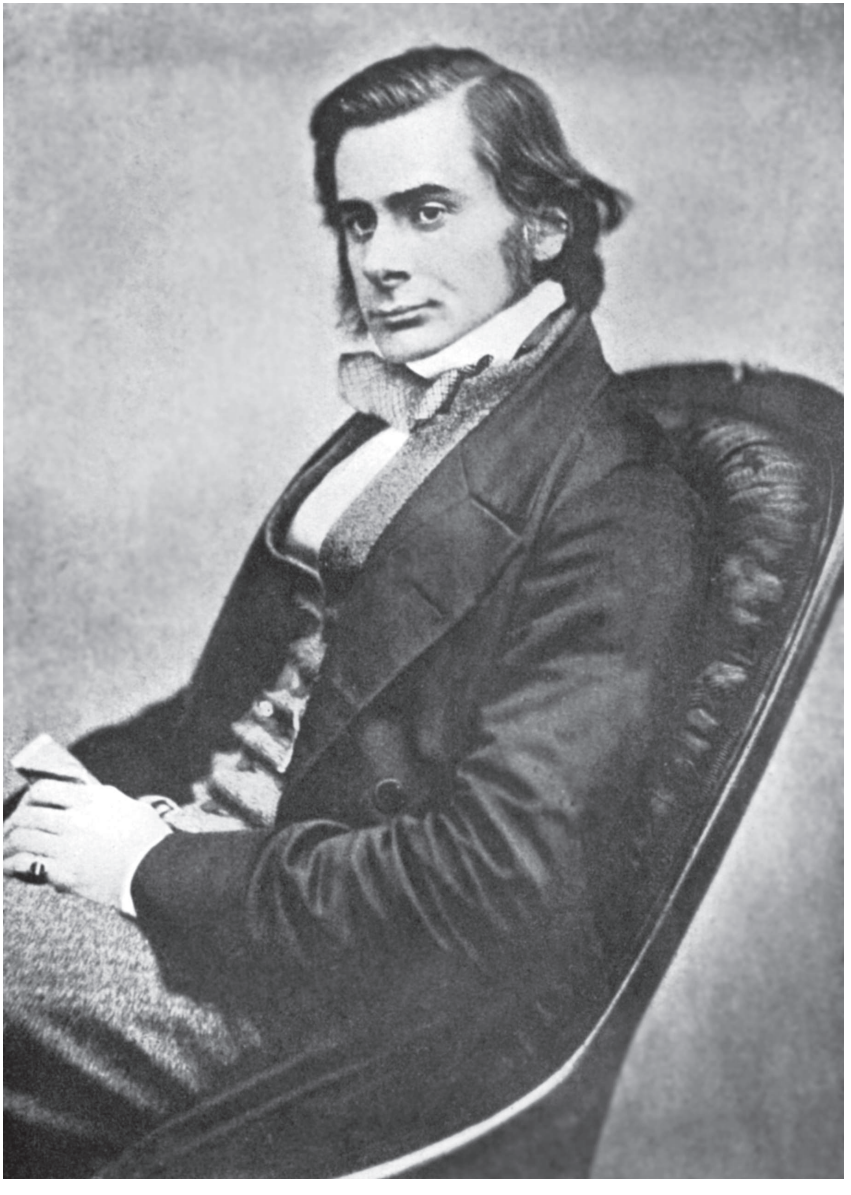


29. *The Meeting of a Family in Heaven* by William Blake (1757–1827).

SOULÈVEMENT COMPLET D'UNE TABLE

Photographie prise dans le salon de M. FLAMMARION, le 12 Novembre 1898. (Le premier pied, à gauche, est à 18 centimètres au-dessus du parquet, le second à 13, celui de droite, au fond, à 8, et celui de droite en avant, à 14). Un assistant cache, à l'aide d'un coussin, les yeux du médium contre la lumière subite du magnésium. Ce médium (EUSAPIA) est mis dans l'impossibilité absolue de faire aucun mouvement suspect.

30. A table levitating during a seance with the medium Eusapia Palladino (1854–1918).



31. The biologist and spiritualist sceptic Thomas Henry Huxley (1825–95).

THE BLESSED DAMOZEL
The blessed damozel leaned out
From the gold bar of Heaven;
Her eyes were deeper than the depth
Of waters stilled at even;
She had three lilies in her hand,
And the stars in her hair were seven.
Around her lovers, newly met
'Mid deathless love's acclaims,
Spoke evermore among themselves
Their rapturous new names:
And the souls mounting up to God
Went by her like thin flames.
Her seemed she scarce had been a day
One of God's choristers;
The wonder was not yet quite gone
From that still look of hers;
Albeit, to them she left, her day
Had counted as ten years.
(Heavy, it is ten years of grace
...for men; and the days,
Surely, she leaned o'er me—her hair
Fell all about my face...
Nothing: the autumn fall of leaves.
The whole year sighs and grieves.)

32. The Damozel awaits the arrival of her lover in heaven.

33. Elsie with a winged gnome (1917). The second of the five Cottingley fairy photographs.

34. The sceptical Charles Castle (Toby Stephens). From the film *Photographing Fairies* (1997).